You Kissed My Soul

Author not credited

STORYPDF

Complete English text · US Letter reading edition

Contents

Chapter 1 6

Chapter 2 9

Chapter 3 13

Chapter 4 18

Chapter 5 24

Chapter 6 28

Chapter 7 32

Chapter 8 36

Chapter 9 40

Chapter 10 46

Chapter 11 50

Chapter 12 58

Chapter 13 63

Chapter 14 67

Chapter 15 72

Chapter 16 76

Chapter 17 82

Chapter 18 86

Chapter 19 92

Chapter 20 96

Chapter 21 101

Chapter 22 106

Chapter 23 113

Chapter 24 119

Chapter 25 124

Chapter 26 130

Chapter 27 137

Chapter 28 146

Chapter 29 153

Chapter 30 159

Chapter 31 164

Chapter 32 170

Chapter 33 176

Chapter 34 185

Chapter 35 189

Chapter 36 195

Chapter 37 203

Chapter 38 208

Chapter 39 214

Chapter 40 219

Chapter 41 225

Chapter 42 230

Chapter 43 235

Chapter 44 239

Chapter 45 245

Chapter 46 251

Chapter 47 259

Chapter 48 264

Chapter 49 269

Chapter 50 275

Chapter 51 280

Chapter 52 284

Chapter 53 290

Chapter 54 296

Chapter 55 301

Chapter 56 307

Chapter 57 312

Chapter 58 317

Chapter 59 325

Chapter 60: Epilogue 330

About this edition

This StoryPDF reading edition contains the complete English text, with its original paragraph and section order preserved.

Newly typeset with selectable text, a linked contents section and chapter bookmarks. Copyright rules can differ by country. Corrections and rights enquiries: liuxinglianxue@gmail.com.

Read online: StoryPDF / You Kissed My Soul.

Reading edition: 2026-10-28. Typography: Crimson Text (SIL Open Font License).

Chapter 1

A human being is a subject to have feelings and emotions that they can never ever be free off. No matter what you will always remember how life has picked you up from a time period and throws you in another. Life, I inhaled loudly thinking how my life has drastically changed. A lone tear slipped from my eye when I remembered the events from two years ago.

“I don’t want you to go. Please don’t go. I’m scared.” I looked into her eyes and held her closer to my chest, gently kissing her on her forehead. I promised I would be back soon.

“Don’t cry, Sissie is going for important work stuff.” She stopped crying and with her little hands, she held my face and sobbed. I was reluctant for a moment thinking I should just leave my work and stay with her but then I knew I had responsibilities. Alright then, I shall wait for you.

“Good girl.” I kissed her again and went out of the ward.

A deep sigh escaped my mouth as I looked out of my red Audi A3 Cabriolet. I watched as the scenery passed by.

My Life has changed and so did I.

I have gone through so much in my life which I desperately want to forget but not the morals.

I looked at the rear view mirror to find my dul brown eyes looking back at me and it had dark circles around it. “What have you done to yourself, Miss Aderyn Brookes?” I muttered to myself. Everything that had to happen passed out and I was no longer that twenty years old girl. I’m twenty two now and to change I have just changed so much that even the people who knew me wouldn’t recognise me if I don’t give them my introduction. As I was driving, my head began to itch as I was sitting over my waist length brown chair and I growled in annoyance as I used my other hand to put the hair to my side and sat comfortably, driving past the houses. Definitely need a haircut!

I was actually driving Jeena, a name I had given to my Audi to my destination. I loved traveling and since a year ago, I have been traveling just everywhere. Feeling the air, witnessing new cultures had become a part of my life since a year.

For three hours I have been driving, driving and driving. At last after twenty minutes I spotted a diner. I parked my Jeena in a parking space and put on my black aviators. I took my backpack along with me as I looked over the place and walked right in feeling hungry. As soon as I opened the door of the diner, I mentally drooled having the aroma of food.

Food. This word is like heaven to me. I can’t even stop myself from eating anything for a few minutes, and here I waited three hours and twenty minutes to eat.

The diner seemed full of people and the waitress ran here and there to take the orders and also to serve. I choose a corner, and sat down and after some minutes a boy came and asked for my order. After giving him my order, he stopped writing on his notepad and gave me a weird look but didn't say anything and left.

After 15 mins my order was placed before me. The most interesting part was everyone, I mean every single homo sapiens present in the diner, were looking at me as if I have grown two to three horns on my head.

Not liking that I was the center of attention I snapped: "What, never seen a girl eating?" By this, everyone looked away.

It was not my fault. I usually never snap at people but I'm hungry, and it's their fault for Staring. I did technically order everything available in this diner.

I wasn't lying when I said I was going to order everything. Without wasting any more minutes I dug into my food.

By the time I finished people were again staring. Some were staring in disbelief and some in amusement. I finished everything. They seriously thought I was going to waste my food?

How judgmental?

I just smirked at this. I paid my bill to the old lady with her mouth wide open and walked to the exit.

As soon as I reached the knob to open the door, the door was yanked wide open and their stood I think the World's Handsomest man in front of me.

And what was I doing at this time?

I couldn't move, as if I was held captive by his deep forest green eyes which were trying to look deep into my soul but couldn't.

I kept staring.

He kept staring.

I kept staring.

He kept staring.

People kept staring.

I kept staring.

Some dudes beside him also kept staring and suddenly I noticed the change in his eyes.

His eyes slowly changed from forest green to hint of black.

Like hatred.

What the hell?

I alerted myself, held myself out of his captive gaze.

Distracting myself from him, I went passed him and the dudes to my Blush.

I don't know why my heart just wouldn't stop beating fast.

Igniting the engine and went out of the parking space, continuing my journey.

Oh man, just what the hell?

Why am I thinking of that forest green eyed guy?

And how the hell did his eye color change?

No not possible, I must be dreaming.

Was it possible?

****

Chapter 2

“So, What do you think about the Deal?” asked Mr. Whitmore nervously.

I swirled the paperweight around the table and stopped it with my index finger, giving an Icy glare to a man named James Whitmore who was standing in front of me.

I heard him audibly gulping which isn’t new to me because people get nervous around me. My glare makes them think the ground will swallow them.

I am Dylan Black Bishop, a multi billionaire and the most powerful and feared Man alive. I am also a Werewolf and the heir of a Royal Family which makes me the Werewolf king.

I have this aura which scares werewolves and makes humans pee their pants. I am 6"2 and 24 years old. I have forest green eyes and black hair.

I am the King, therefore making every Alpha of different packs bow to me and fear me. I am mostly known for my Ruthless behavior. People call me Beast.

Today I have come to Las Vegas to Buy a company. Being in the human world, my Identity is that I am a multi billionaire business tycoon. My werewolf identity remains hidden from the human world So I have to hide my werewolf king’s Aura.

People can sense my power still and get nervous or scared around me. I even have special powers. I can look into people’s brains and know about their past and history. I can even read people’s minds showing me what they think. I have many more powers.

Right now I want to buy Mr Whitmore’s company, which will make a good profit to my already established reputation and business.

Mr Whitmore has brought a deal out of it that instead of me completely owning his company, He would take care of the company and work under me.

He wants me to buy his company and let him to remain the CEO of the company but will still work under me.

Hmmm sounds interesting.

He seems to be a good human.

Lets hear What’s going on in his mind.

I focused in his eyes and tried to hear him.

“Please, please, please God help me. Let Mr. Bishop say Yes to this Proposal.”

Hmmmm Let’s keep his hope.

I stood up from my chair and closed the middle button of my Armani suit. Everyone present In the conference hall stood up following me. I gave a curt nod which led everyone Know that I agreed to the Deal. Everyone started shaking hands and Mr Whitmore ran towards me to shake my hand.

“Thank you, Thank you Mr Bishop” he happily cried shaking his head.

I put my hand on his shoulder briefly and came out of the room with Blake, my Beta and Cole, my Warrior following me.

Blake and Cole are both my childhood friends. Blake being my Beta is the Beta of Betas and also has some special powers, and Cole is my best fighter Warrior who has Powerful, power skills in fighting.

They always accompany me with my business meetings. Though they know me from my childhood they still have fear and respect towards me. My power lets their wolves bow down to me.

“I never expected you to except that Deal that easily...” said Blake from behind.

I looked at him and replied ” Me neither...”

He raised his eyebrows but never did ask further questions.

Cole came with the car and we all drove back to our Hotel Penthouse to change, because we have to get back to our pack house before night.

After changing into a casual Denim Jeans and Polo Black shirt, we three began our car journey towards the pack house.

Our pack house is situated at the outskirt of the town inside the forest, hidden by a shield to remain hidden from human and trespasser Rogues.

“It will take another two hours to reach the pack house, And I am hungry” said Blake who is driving.

" I know a Diner here somewhere, why don’t we stop their and eat?” said Cole asking for my permission.

I simply nodded in agreement.

We reached the Diner and parked the car near a Audi.

Blake whistled and said “Man check it out. What a hot piece of Car. It is. Awesome”. He pointed towards the Audi.

Cole and I Shook our heads at him. Blake always got excited seeing expensive cars.

We parked and made our way to the entrance door of the Diner When suddenly I smelled the most delicious and mouthwatering smell of Roses and Chocolates. A unique combination.

My wolf whose name is Black began to wiggle his tail and howl in my mind.

He shouted “Run, run and follow the smell...quick”

I fastened my steps. When the smell increased from behind the door, I could no longer control myself and I pushed the door wide open out of my way.

Behind the door stood I think the most gorgeous girl in the world. She had the most beautiful brown eyes which held secrets and Brown hair with a goddess like figure.

I just don’t get why I want to engulf her in my arms and hide and protect her from the world but I controlled myself.

She looked at me with wide eyes probably confused about my sudden bashed entry.

My wolf howled with joy and the word which I didn’t want to hear my whole life came out of my wolf’s mouth....“Mate”.

NO, NO, NO this can’t be happening.

Mate NO, I don’t want a Mate.

To my wolf’s disagreement, I shut him out of my mind.

My eyes color started to change with anger when the girl before me went past me and drove taking that Audi towards Vegas.

I controlled myself and opened my mind.

“Go and get her, what are you waiting for?” My wolf Black shouted.

“I don’t want a mate and you know why ” I replied.

" I don’t know anything, just get her.” Black shouted angrily.

" Fine.” I gritted my teeth and muttered.

" Cole, Blake go and get that girl and bring her harmless to the Pack house.” I ordered.

They knowingly smiled and nodded.

“I will directly meet you at the Pack house” I informed.

They nodded and ran towards the car and drove following her.

I walked to the back of the Diner and towards the woods where I shifted into my black Wolf and began running towards my pack house.

Unlike me, My wolf was too happy and couldn’t wait to meet his Mate again.

“What I am going to do?” I sighed and muttered to myself.

Chapter 3

It had been 15 minutes since I left that diner and I'm still thinking about that dude with the forest green eyes.

"Why, why, why?" I said, hitting the steering wheel in frustration.

This never happened to me ever, so why now?

Why am I thinking about a random guy whom I don't even know?

Damn.

When i averted my gaze to my rear view mirror, I noticed a car that has been following me since I left the Diner. I averted blush to the left side of the road to let them overtake me but they didn't, instead they also averted their car to the left following me.

What the hell ?

I again averted Jeena to the right wanting them to overtake me but they again, followed me.

Okay, now they are getting on my nerves.

I pushed hard on the accelerator and sped up Jeena. They also sped up following me.

Damn it, why are they following me?

I pushed hard on the accelerator and sped up more fast and soon I lost their car from my sight.

I smirked. No match for my Jeena!

I could see a driveway 1 km away from where I'm driving, and soon I'm on that driveway driving my Blush when suddenly, a car came out of the woods that was sideways in the driveway.

That car was the car that was following me.

Damn it, should have known!

They took a shortcut.

Wait they know about shortcuts. That means they are familiar to this place where as I don't know a thing except my GPS showing me where I'm going.

I'm in trouble I guess.

Before I knew it, the car overtook me and suddenly stopped right before me. It caused me to push on the brakes hard, the car stopping with a screeching sound, making me bend forwards.

Thank god the seat-belts are on, or else I would have flown out of my car like Superman, or more like a Superwoman.

Irony!

Not the right time to joke.

I got out of my car and began to yell.

“What the hell man, You want to die, fine. But i don’t plan on dying soon”.

Two well built men got out of the car, and I remembered they were the dudes standing behind that forest green eyed dude.

“What the hell,You two”, I pointed my finger towards them.

“Aren’t you two the dudes back from that diner”?

One the dudes with black hair rubbed the back of his neck with his hands and nodded.

They looked at each other and nodded and before i could ask what was going on and why they were following me, i felt a sharp pain on my right thigh and saw a tranquilizer.

A what? And before I could faint, I heard a mere “Forgive us Luna.”

Who is Luna?

I slowly drifted to sleep thinking of the possibilities of what is going to happen to me.

I felt myself being lifted bridal style and placed on a soft thing then, heard the engine of the car igniting and a man yelling.

“Hell yeah! I’m riding that beauty”.

“Which beauty”? I thought.

Even in a tranquilized state, I could hear them but am not able to open my eyes.

Shit are they talking about my Jeena?

If anything happens to her I’m going to make their lives a living hell and I mean it.

I could feel air hitting my face which means we were in a moving car.

I needed to know where I’m going in order to escape. Though I can’t open my eyes, i still know what’s going on, but only because of my training.

I focused on my heartbeat, and began to count my heartbeat. I would count again from the beginning if I could feel the car turning left or right.

Soon the car came to a halt, and I inwardly made an imaginary map in my mind which i knew was going to help me soon or later.

I could hear the screeching sounds of a gate opening and again, the car moved.

Okay, Okay you can do this. Calm down and just focus on counting.

The car again came to a halt, and I found myself being lifted by a muscular arm.

Whoever this man is better not drop me.

I again began counting my heartbeat.

1.2.3.4.5.

I felt turning again so I counted from the beginning

1.2.3.

The sound of a knob turning.

The door opening.

Sounds of footsteps.

I marked everything and suddenly I was put down on a soft thing.

I guess a mattress or bed.

Why would someone kidnap someone and make them lie in a comfortable bed, in place of a dungeon or a concrete floor.

No sound of chains or handcuffs

So I guess I am not chained or tied down.

Strange, kidnappers.

I heard footsteps, a knob turning and a door opening.

Judging from the footsteps there were three people.

I could feel a presence hovering above me from the bedside or mattress whatever it is, and someone sniffing.

What the hell? sniffing. Someone is sniffing me?

Like a dog?

Then someone inhaling deeply.

“She Shouldn’t be here,damn it. She doesn’t belong here”.

I heard a masculine voice which made tingles run down my spine, but in a good way.

Speak.

“Alpha, But we need her.” I heard another man speak.

“No” the man whose name is Alpha i guess yelled.

“Look at her. She is no match for me. She is pathetic. How can someone make someone like her my pair?”

Ouch. Was that directed towards me?

Why do i feel hurt listening to it?

“Alpha please try to understand. As much as you try to deny it, she is your other half and as much you need her, the pack also needs her.”

“Fine, do whatever you want. Keep her, throw her, I don’t care. Just make sure you keep her away from me.”

With that i heard footsteps which meant the Alpha guy was going.

The Door opened and the sounds of footsteps stopped.

“SHE IS NO ONE TO ME AND AS SOON AS SHE REGAINS CONSCIOUSNESS, I’M GOING TO REJECT HER SO NO PLEADING AND ALL. ITS MY FINAL DECISION”

The alpha dudes voice boomed, leaving no space for no. I could already imagine the other dudes nodding in fear.

“She is weak”, He said and left.

I felt anger boiling within me hearing that last statement.

I don’t like people judging me.

Forcing myself, I pushed myself to regain consciousness.

Anger is making me regain consciousness.

I pushed myself harder

“Look, I think I saw her fingers twitching.” One of the two men spoke.

“Impossible. I shot her a high dosage. She shouldn’t be regaining consciousness for up to 3-4 hours”, Another guy spoke.

I tried again and this time I forced myself more. Soon I could feel my eyes opening and were soon met with brown and blue eyes.

“Impossible” they both whispered at same time.

Chapter 4

I opened my eyes and was met with two pairs of shocked eyes looking at me. I glared at them which made them recover quickly out of their state, but they looked at each other like they can talk through their minds.

I took my hands and folded them under my head and folded my leg upon the other and gave them a smile.

They saw my position and I was sure that their eyes were going to pop out of their sockets.

They didn't expect such a kind of gesture from their hostage, and also from a girl. They thought I was going to freak out or try to escape which I will definitely do later.

One of them cleared his throat and said, "Hey I'm uh Blake"

Then the other one said, "Hi I'm Cole".

I gave them a look and jumped out of the bed making them take a step back in surprise. Then I started to walk towards the door.

"Hey where are you going? You can't leave this room wait!"

I was already out of the room walking to God knows where. They soon joined me and began their babbling.

"You can't go here, you can't go there"

Blah, blah, blah.

I thought I was going to be in some type of warehouse or something but I guess this is a different type of kidnapping.

It's a big house.

A very big house, somehow close to a mansion.

Why would they Kidnap me?

When I was walking, both of them stopped and began to quarrel with each other. I sped up and took a left turn.

Soon after checking so many rooms including interfering some couples intimate moments, I got to the room I was searching for.

The Kitchen room.

I went inside the room and opened the refrigerator to find heavy amount of food and mainly packaged meat.

No wonder there are so many people in this house.

I took a coke and began to drink it, when both of them entered the Kitchen.

“Hey what are you doing here? You are not allowed to leave your Room”, Blake stated making me choke on my coke.

Allowed?

“I don’t need anybody’s permission to do anything and what do you mean by what am I’m doing here? Can’t you see its a Kitchen and I’m hungry so I’m eating your food” I stated the obvious.

“Why a- are you not afraid of us? we literally Kidnapped you.” Cole said looking at me curiously.

“Why should I? If you wanted to hurt me or kill me you already had done it right?” I asked raising an eyebrow.

“Yeah we won’t hurt you” Blake said cautiously.

“So, if you didn’t kidnap me to kill me or to hurt me, then why did you kidnap me because let me tell you all that you can’t demand money in return of me to anyone. There is no one there as my family, and if you have kidnapped me for some other reason then spill it out and quick” I said looking at them seriously in their eyes.

“Listen- there is a reason why we kidnapped you and you will know it soon, but until then you have to stay here, and we promise that nobody will hurt you here” Cole said his eyes pleading.

“Please, it’s a request” Blake added.

I sipped from the coke and thought about it.

If I wasn’t here, I would have been in Las Vegas and in some hotel or motel wasting my money.

Why not stay here ?

It’s a big place and I can live here freely for days.

It’s not like that I’m afraid of them hurting me because I can take care of myself.

Hmmm, ok.

“Okay then”, I said making them grin.

“Thank You Luna”, they said in unison.

“Luna?” I asked confused.

“My name is Aderyn Brookes, call me Adie” I said smiling.

They looked at each other then said beaming “ok Adie”.

“Now where is blush?” I asked narrowing my eyes.

“Blush?” Cole asked.

“My car Blush, where is it?” I asked again.

“You mean that Audi A3 Cabriolet?” Blake asked, excitement evident in his voice.

“Yes that Audi A3 Cabriolet, her name is Jeena” I mocked him.

“It’s in our garage and your bag which we found in that car is in your room which you were 15 minutes ago” Cole said nonchalant.

“Come on now let’s go” Blake added.

“Go where?” I asked puzzled.

“To the alpha” Blake said and got a smack to the head by Cole.

“Okay then let’s go” I said excited to find out more about the place.

We went through the corridor and took the stairs to the second floor. Finally we reached a big wooden door and knocked on it.

“Come in” said a husky voice sending shivers down my body.

I looked at Cole and Blake who were already giving me a knowing look as if they knew what happened when I heard that voice.

This is really a weird place.

Cole turned the knob and opened the door. Cole entered the room and Blake entered after him. I shrugged my shoulders and followed them in.

I looked inside the room to see it’s an office. Complete with Bookcases, a couch, a desk, a mini fridge and a big glass window.

I was so engrossed in looking at the interior of the room that I didn’t notice them looking at me.

When I did, I noticed the man behind the large desk. He was the same guy whom I met back at that diner.

He was wearing a black leather jacket underneath a white shirt and black denim jeans.

He was actually really handsome.

With the veins popped out on his hands I knew that he workouts a lot.

“Are you done drooling at me?” He asked with a narrow gaze.

Woah! Arrogant asshole.

“Don’t flatter yourself” I said making his eyes wide.

I guess he never expected such comeback from me.

Blake and Cole choked on air and I smirked at him. His Forest green eyes turned to black and I was totally shocked at seeing such things which isn’t possible for a human to do.

“Don’t talk to me like that” he growled, yes growled like a dog and his voice was wildly, husky, and dead.

I kept my face stoic. Cole and Blake came in front of me blocking him from my view.

After some time, they sidestepped and went near the guy, standing behind him.

The guy sat down on his chair and closed his eyes. He opened them again, and his eyes changed back to its original green color.

He gestured me to take a seat before him. I went there and sat on the chair and leaned on it.

“What’s your name?” He blurted out all of sudden.

“Me?” I asked with an amused face, Pointing a finger towards myself.

“Yes you who else?” He said annoyed.

“Why? Are you going to marry me?” I said, and kept my elbows on his desk placing my face on it mocking him.

Cole and Blake gave an amused look while the guy before me looked at me irritated.

“Tell.Me.Your.Name” he said enunciating each word.

“Okay” I said, and leaned back not saying anything.

“SPEAK!” He snapped, his voice booming in the room.

Cole and Blake looked tense and gave me a pleasing look, telling me to tell him my name.

I inserted my fingers inside my ears and shook it dramatically.

“Woah what got into your pants? No need to snap” I said, him clenching his fists and banging it on the table.

I could hear a crack sound coming from the table.

Woah did he break the table?

How it can be possible?

Nevertheless I gave him an unaffected expression and smiled at him battling my eyelashes innocently.

He seemed to be more angry. He opened his mouth to speak but stopped when I cut him off

“Tell me your name first then I will tell mine” I said inspecting my nails.

He raised an eyebrow and leaned back on his chair crossing his arms on his chest.

“Fine! It’s Dylan Black Bishop”.

“Aderyn Brookes” I replied.

He nodded his head and stood up. I followed his action and stood before him. He was really tall, his height intimidating mine.

“Miss Brookes I know you have a lot of questions going on inside your mind, but I guess as they have already said you are going to stay here for awhile. As much as I hate the Idea, I’m letting you stay here only because of my people” he said and crossed his arms.

I followed his action.

“Your people?” I raised an eyebrow making him to look back at Cole and Blake who just smiled at him nervously.

“And what if I don’t want to stay?” I asked making him to look back at me.

“This is my land Miss Brookes and people will only follow my order. So as long as you are here you will have to follow my orders. Am I clear?” He said arrogantly.

I smirked and leaned towards him “I don’t give a Damn to what people do or not. I am a person of my own, and I won’t follow any of your stupid rules as long as I’m here. Am I clear?” I said, smirking when I saw him getting angry.

I turned on my heels and walked out of the room but not before turning back at him and saying “Don’t worry, as long as I’m staying here and need any help in the future I WON’T ASK YOU” Flipping my hair walking out of the room.

Blake and Cole's laughter erupted from the room.

Assholes.

Chapter 5

I went back to my room and took my back pack with me inside the adjoined bathroom. It was a small room with a small bathroom but I was informed by Cole that I would be given a bigger and better room for staying.

I unpacked my back pack and looked for my loose shirt and Pants. A Photo frame stopped me and I took it and touched the frame using my fingers when suddenly a memory flooded back into my mind.

“I will sit with Mom” Ryan, my elder brother argued.

“No, I will sit with her” I demanded, pushing him.

“No I will” he argued.

“I will” I shoved him more forcefully.

“I”

“I”

“I”

“Okay that’s enough, stop you two right now” Dad interfered, separating us.

“Dad I want to sit with mom” I whined.

“She does this every time Dad” Ryan argued.

“Okay fine Ad, let your brother sit with your mom this time.” Dad said sternly, leaving no room for a No.

“Fine!” I muttered, crossing my hands around my chest.

“Now don’t make that face, come here” Mom said opening her arms.I smiled and ran into her arms.Finally I sat on Mom’s lap while Ryan sat beside us wrapping his arm around us and Dad stood behind us holding little Nancy in his arms.A family picture.

~

“Get a hold on yourself Adie” I whispered to myself, closing my eyes And taking deep breaths.I put the frame back into the bag and took out a comfortable t-shirt and black Spandex which came up to my ankle.I travel with only a little luggage.

Every time I travelled, I bought new clothes.Going inside the Bathroom, I took a nice Shower, washing my body with my favourite Lavender body wash and changing into my Spandex and T-shirt.I tied my hair up into a neat ponytail and left my clothes in the laundry box.Coming out of the bathroom, I was met with a blonde girl.

She looked like a teenage girl with Brown eyes and maybe was 5'3. She had shoulder length blonde hair that complimented her slim figure. She was sitting on my bed holding a tray.As soon as she saw me coming out she stood up and took hold of the tray, giving me a smile.

"Uh Hi Lun- uh I am Bella and I'm here to give you your snacks" she said stuttering in the middle.

"Hi!" I waved and made my way towards her."I'm Aderyn. Call me Adie" I smiled at her. she seemed to visibly relax.

"Call me Bell. I'm Cole's sister" she told me, making me mark the similarities they had."Nice" I replied.

"I don't like this room" I said, while eating my Oreos.

"Uh About that, I'll be showing you your room after you are done with your snacks. Alpha has alloted me for this work" she said and I nodded.

"Why are you all calling him Alpha?" I asked and noticed as the color drained from her face.

"Uh He owns this place. He is our leader an-" I cut her off questioning "Leader? What are you all? Mafia ?" I asked making her scowl at me."Uh, no, no. We are not involved in any criminal activities. We are away from Huma- uh uh" she began to stammer but I did catch the word which she wanted to say "Humans".

Away from Humans?

What does that mean?

I didn't ask her anything about this. If she wanted to tell me she can, but willingly. I won't force her unless I find out about this on my own.I just hummed and nodded my head in reply and continued to eat my Oreos.

I found out that she was not actually a Teenager. She was 21 years old. She didn't look that mature as per her age.Never be judgmental I guess. After finishing my Snacks, I got up from the bed and clapped my hands.

"So? Time to show me my room" I said and she laughed seeing my enthusiasm.

"Okay. Get your bags and follow me" she said and gave me some time to get my bags. I took my bags and followed her out of the room.

She walked through a hallway and I heard some voices. Voices of people talking, cheering, gossiping, laughing.

“Who all are these people in this house? ” I wondered.

We took the stairs and soon we reached another hallway.“Here we are” she stopped before a room and beamed opening the door for me.I smiled at her and entered the room.I was in awe seeing the interior of the room.It was big room. Doubled in size as compared to the previous one. A Queen sized bed was in the middle of the room with a canopy. A big glass window was at the head of the bed, and there were two doors. Probably a walk in closet and an attached bathroom. A Led was attached to the wall and under it, was a big cupboard full of books. There was also a red couch near the wall. The walls of the room were painted Purple and white.

“Do you like it?” Bell asked from behind me.I turned around grinning like a fool saying “I love it”.

“Okay. You take your time adjusting in your new room. I gotta leave but I’ll be back soon” She said and left closing the door behind her.I turned around and walked towards the bed, throwing myself on it feeling the soft and comfortable mattress underneath me.

“Heaven” I muttered and felt myself drowning to sleep.

*******Dylan POV***

“Come in” I said to the person who knocked at my office door.Bella, the younger sister of my Warrior Cole entered the room and bowed her head in respect.

“What is it?” I asked and marked as she began to grow nervous around me. I could hear her heartbeat beating rapidly out of nervousness. Before she could say anything I focused on her face, and in a short period of time, I came to know everything that she was thinking about and what happened.

“It’s good that she liked her room. You will be with her at all times. I want you to give me every detail about her and make sure to protect her. She shouldn’t be harmed in anyway.” I ordered and she nodded flabbergasted.

“Am I clear?” I asked. She replied as quickly she could “Yes Alpha”.

“Good, and one more thing. Make sure she doesn’t find out anything about us until I want it to happen. Are you getting me?” I asked as I leaned against my chair raking my fingers against my hair.

“Ye-Yes Alpha” she nodded.

“Leave” I ordered. She hurried out of the room, closing the door behind her.I sighed and looked towards the window.It doesn’t matter if I want a mate or not, she still is my mate and I’ll be damned if anything happens to her.I’ll take care of her.

“Aderyn Brookes” I muttered, and pursed my lips thinking, Who are you?

******

Chapter 6

“Adie?” a voice asked knocking from the other side of the door.

“Yeah?” I replied sitting on my bed.

“It’s me Bell. Can I come in?”

“Yeah sure. Come in”.

The door opened and she entered smiling at me.

“Did you sleep well?” She asked smiling sitting on my bed.

“Yeah.This bed is really comfortable and I was really tired” I yawned and stretched my arms up.

“Well it’s already nine in the morning and Alpha has asked you to come down for breakfast” she said and I nodded.

I got up from the bed and opening my bag I took a Black sweatshirt and my jeans.I took my bra and panties and went inside the bathroom to do my business.

I took a quick shower and brushed my teeth.I braided my hair to a side and wore my clothes and came out of the bathroom to find Bell holding my family Frame.

“What are you doing?” I asked my voice neutral catching her off guard.

“Uh I was thinking to unpack your things and I found this frame.I’m sorry. I didn’t want to intervene in your personal things” she said with a regret and kept the frame in the table.

“Oh no it’s okay” I said and went to her and gestured her to help me with the things.She smiled and within 15 minutes we were done with the things kept right in its place.

I took the frame and kept it on the bedside on the table lamp.

“Is this your family?” She asked from beside me pointing towards the frame.

“Yeah” I smiled and nodded looking at the frame.

“Were are they now?” She asked and I smiled whispering “very close to me”.

“You are really lucky, You know that?” She said and I turned raising an eyebrow.

“And why is that?”

I did mark her saddened posture and her glistening eyes.

“You have a family. A perfect family. A mother with whom you can share things. A father who will protect you and will be there for you always. A brother and a sister on whom you can shower you love. A perfect family. But me, I only have my brother” my heart clenched hearing her say those sentences.

“Where are you parents?” I asked and regretted asking when tears rolled down her face.

“They left me and Cole when we were small in an Orphanage with a letter that they are unable to gives us a perfect lifestyle.They said that they were poor and didn’t have enough money to parent us and they were really sorry for doing that.They even wrote that they are forced to take such a big step only for us.They wanted us to be happy and asked us to forgive them” she said and she began to cry.

" Oh I’m so sorry” I said and hugged her while she sobbed on my chest.

“It’s okay.I’m sure that they really loved you and wanted the best for you” I said truthfully and patted her back.

“Yeah.I know that” she said and wiped her tears smiling at me.

“Anyways let’s go down.Everyone is waiting” she said and turned but I held her forearm and turned her back to look at me.

“Everyone? What do you mean by that?” I asked confused.

“My family.You will see” she smiled and took my arm dragging me out of the room still confused.

We went down and walking for almost three minutes we reached a door and when we entered I gawked seeing the number of people chattering, eating, gossiping.

A total may be two hundred to three hundred people were there.Some were very old.While some were adults.Some were teenagers while some were really small, kids.

“What is this? A small city of your own?” I asked Bell dumbfounded.

“Welcome to my family” she beamed and laughed seeing my expression.

It was a very large room. There were many big dining tables and people were sitting in their own groups which reminded me of my school canteen eating their food.

Suddenly everyone stopped their talking and hundreds pairs of eyes were on us or should I say on me.

They all stood up seeing me and I’m sure my face showed confusion.

Respect?

For me?

Why?

“Luna” that all said in a chorus and bowed their head.

I scratched my head and looked beside me and behind me thinking may be someone else but was more confused when I found none but only me.

“Who is Luna?” I whispered and suddenly everyone began to whisper among their groups.

What the freaking fudge is going on?

I found everyone giving me curious looks. Some seemed very happy, while some were extremely happy. Some had tears of joy in their eyes and were eyeing me with hope. While some were neutral.

“Who is Luna?” I asked to Bell and it didn’t go unnoticed when the color drained from her face.

“Uh it’s I mean Its U-” she began to stammer.

Oh great! Back to stammering.

This place is really getting on my nerves.

Suddenly everyone stopped talking and they stood straight keeping quiet.

Now What?

“Alpha” they all said in a chorus and bowed.

With furrowed eyebrow, I turned around to find the Alpha Guy, whose name was Taylon I guess standing behind me like a King with confidence emitting from his body.

“Hi Taylon” I waved when Blake and Cole entered after him.

The Alpha guy scowled at me and glared at me saying “It’s Dylan”.

“Yeah Dylan” I corrected and smiled sheepishly while Blake and Cole tried to hide their smile.

Alpha Dude entered the room and went past me saying “Good Morning everyone. We will having Miss Aderyn Brookes as our guest for someday and I hope you all to give her a good time as long as she stays here. Let me make this one thing very clear” he said and kept quiet not completing the sentence.

I scowled at him and waited for him to complete the sentence but when he didn’t utter any words what seemed like 15 minutes I snapped “Are you going to say something?“.

He stopped whatever he was doing and glared at me. I crossed my hands over my chest and raised an eyebrow.

What did he thought ?

His glare doesn't affect me.

He looked back at everyone and nodded his head making everyone to sit down on their places and they began to eat their breakfast.

I was still confused. He turned back facing towards me and held my hand. Immediately tingles ran down the door where he touched and he jerked his hand away. My skin tingled and a shiver ran down my spine.

I think he felt it too because he was having the same expression as me.

Shock.

He stared directly into my eyes as if he was wanting to read me. His eyelashes began to flutter furiously and he furrowed his eyebrows.

His face showed a void emotion which soon changed to confusion. I marked as his expression changed to frustration and soon anger contorted into his face.

Very strange.

He was about to open his mouth to say something but closed it looking here and there towards the other people. He stared back at me and after 5 minutes of only staring, he decided to leave the room.

He went past me taking long strides with Blake and Cole trailing behind him.

I looked beside me to find Bell giving me a nervous look and she kept staring and nodding somewhere for ten minutes like she was having a conversation on a phone. But the only difference was there was no phone.

Looks like I have to find everything of my own.

Mission finding Answers.

****

Chapter 7

Dylan Pov

As I headed towards my office, I mind linked Bell asking her to take Brookes down for breakfast. The news of her presence in my house and she was the Luna spread like a fire in a forest. Every single werewolf has came to know about her being the queen within a day.

I can't blame anyone though. Aderyn has this aura around her which makes a werewolf bow before her. She is mated to a werewolf king after all which makes her the Queen of Werewolf.

Though She is beautiful but the most important part for me is her being a human. Humans don't have any comparison to werewolves in any sense. Werewolves are way much stronger than Human in the field of strength, power, life span and even intelligence.

Being mated to a Human means responsibility. Humans are not supposed to know about werewolves and as I have been mated to a Human I've to take care of her and her life as she is my other half. But this becomes really tough for me for her being a human.

She stands no chance against werewolves and my enemies. Being the king, I have to take care of my kingdom and my people but still I do have enemies, who will do anything to cause hamper and harm my title. As they never got the opportunity to harm me because of my special abilities they will now get a chance to harm my Kingdom using my soulmate, Aderyn Brookes.

I never wanted a mate. No, I don't think that a mate will be the reason of my weakness but I'm in my own problems now. I had a terrible past.

My family.

My eye watered thinking about them. My only family died before my eyes when I was only Thirteen years old. They were killed by our enemies before my own eyes. My father who was the King and my mother, the Luna Queen were killed by our enemies who used a potion which was made by a powerful Witch very cunningly.

That potion ceased my father's abilities as well as my mother's abilities making them as weak as a Human, hence they died when they were stabbed using a Silver Dagger.

I was saved by my Father's beta who managed me to take me away with him to a safe space. During those days, when we were away from the Kingdom we came to know about that the Kingdom was running down by our enemies. They wanted to clear werewolves existence from this earth.

I was burning with revenge. Revenge for my family's death. Revenge for my people. Revenge for my Kingdom. Hence, soon enough when I changed into a werewolf for the first time, I came to know about my abilities. My father's beta started to teach me. He taught me how to fight, use my abilities and taught me about being a Royal werewolf.

Though we remained living in a cave under a mountain we managed to build ourselves and soon the day came back for my our plan to be executed.

While we were away the beta remained in touch with the important and powerful Alphas of all the provisions in order to execute our plan. The Alphas are with their future king which is me.

Finally, we attacked and we used the same trick as they did with us. We took help from the Witches. The most powerful eleven witches out of twelve were hired for the work and the one who prepared the potion for our enemies was killed by the other eleven witches. According to them she violated their rule of going against a werewolf King was shameful for their kind.

We managed to trap our enemies and finally, still burning with the fire of revenge I killed them mercilessly with my own hands. I Burnt them to death.

It's been already five years since this incident and my revenge but still my enemies are not someone who needs to be forgotten or forgiven about. They are powerful and they go to any extent to take revenge on me. They aren't any Vampires or witches who can be easily controlled by my abilities.

They are "The Nachzehrer".

In a century where centuries-old vampires have teenage angst and blood lust in the mix of all their problems, it's was like a refreshing change to the vampire family - the Nachzehrer. Some kind of bizarre mix of ghoul and vampire, the Nachzehrer is a soul-sucking monster that is native to the northern regions of Germany who rises from the grave to devour his or her own kin. The very deadly enemies of the werewolf kind and even for the Human.The Nachzehrer can also kill living people by ringing church bells that bring death to all who hear them and by making you come in contact with its shadow. It sounds more frightening than glittering teenagers.

People call them shadows because no one actually saw them. They would just pass away and you could barely mark their shadows. I used to belief it as one a mythological creature until one day when we were suddenly attacked by not only just one but hundreds of Nachzehrers.

Turns out that my Dad killed a Nachzehrers family when he went out for patrolling. It wasn't his fault. He got got their scent lingering in our area which turned him to be protective to his kind and he did what he could do to save our people, by killing them. But one of a member of the family managed to get away in time but he swore to come to take revenge on us. Time passed by and one day we were finally attacked.

We could do nothing to their incredible speed and power. It was really strange. Because normally werewolves could fight them but in this case we came to know that they were using protecting spells and shield. Black Magic caste by one the powerful witch.

I'm broken. Loosing my family at such a young age was not easy for me. I had nightmares on their screams and the memories of them getting killed before my eyes is still fresh.

I don't think Aderyn will ever understand this. She seems like a carefree girl and their is this smile which remains plastered on her face every time I see her. She can never take this much pain. She doesn't deserves someone like me. She doesn't deserves so much pain.

So, why was she mated to me? Someone so broken and cold hearten doesn't deserve a mate like Aderyn.

So why?

Today when I went to the Dining room and mind linked everyone warning to stay away from her and she shouldn't know about us being werewolves, I sensed something was off.

I sensed something radiating from her. No doubt, she was a Human I can sense that and my mate bond helped me with it but today I felt some aura radiating from her.

So when she snapped at me wanting to know why I was not speaking anything to the people ofcourse remaining unaware of the mind link process, I turned back to her held and her arms.

The only way to know about her was to read her mind. I found it strange that since I met her back from the Diner, I never heard anything coming out of her mind.

I focused into her mind while she furrowed her eyebrows at me. To my absolute horror I found nothing.

I furrowed my eyebrows and tried to focus more. The more I concentrated the more blank messages I got. This was impossible.

It is a impossible thing. It is like she wasn't thinking anything. I got everything blank. How can anyone not think.

Soon I began to have a headache. I wanted to ask her what was going inside her mind. I wanted to scream at her on why I wasn't able to read her. Who was she?

This was a new thing to me. I never experienced incapability of using my own powers. I felt weak. My head began to pound which made my anger to surface.

Not wanting to create a scene, I went away from the hall to my room.

"What's is wrong with me" I screamed frustrated holding my throbbing head.

I punched the wall making a hole on the solid surface frustrated.

“Who are you Aderyn Brookes?” I asked myself mentally.

Soon the scenes with her from the beginning flashed through my eyes. Now when I come to think of it I’m finding it really weird. Her eyes are dull most of the time when I talked to her. I found her heartbeat fasten though she seemed calm and reservative. Every time she smiled, it didn’t reach her eyes which means she faked smiling.

She seems to be a woman filled with secrets. But what secrets? What lies behind her fake smile? She seems confident all of the time and it is really strange for a Human and that also a girl not to freak out finding herself kidnapped and in a strange place. It looks like she doesn’t fear anyone.

The more I think of her, the more I wanted to know her.

Without me knowing she has managed to jab my mind.

“What are you Aderyn Brookes?” I questioned sliding against the wall and sitting on the floor. My mind drifted back to the Enigmatic Woman who had my attention and managed to invade my mind in all ways.

****

Chapter 8

Aderyn POV

“C’mon let’s have our breakfast,” Bell said as she took hold of my hand and began to drag me somewhere.

“Wait! Aren’t we going to eat with them?” I asked pointing at the people who were having their breakfast in the dining hall.

“No we will have it in the other room” she dragged me and I marked the looks people gave me when we walked through them into a room.

“Why are we having it alone away from them?” I asked

“Blake and Cole and even the Alpha will be joining us here” she said as she began to put her plates on the table.

I helped her and soon as she said the three monkeys entered the room with a stoic face.

“What will you eat Bread or cereals?” Bell asked from across the table.

“Bread please” I said smiling at her. All the while I could feel somebody burning holes into my side. I looked to my left and watched as the king kong watched me slowly fluttering his eyes as if he is trying to read me.

“What nonsense” I thought and banged my hand intentionally on the table making him to come out of his little world.

First, he stared at me emotionless then seconds later his expression changed to a scowling one and next minute he was eating.

“This man is a Psychopath” I thought to myself.

I took the bread and began to butter it using a knife when there was a loud screeching voice. I was sure that it was a rat but I began to laugh silently when a brunette came into view wearing a blouse or may be bikini like top with short skirt and big heels. Her face was caked with make up and she truly looked somewhat like Selena Gomez except for the beautiful part.

Selena Gomez was and is beautiful.

“What is this nonsense, finding the Queen?” She shouted at the top of her voice and I was sure that my ears would began to bleed anytime soon.

“Mind your tone and get lost Lily” Blake muttered drinking from his water.

“How dare you talk to me like that? I’m the Queen” she shouted folding her hands on her chest.

I looked at Bell to find her silently eating her cereals. She paid no attention towards the girl whose name was Lily. Unlike Bell, Cole and Dylan looked tensed.

“Lily don’t start on this topic again” Cole said through gritted teeth and pointed towards the door asking her to leave.

“Shut up! You don’t teach me what to do” she sneered and averted her eyes towards me. Her eyes widened for some seconds but she managed to hide it quickly. I did notice the fear in her eyes which she professionally hid under those fake contact lens.

“You got to be kidding me” she shouted throwing her hands in the air.

“A human? A human will rule us?” She started but was cut off by Dylan banging on the table.

“Enough Lily” he shouted getting up from his seat and he took hold of her arms taking her to a little distance. I could still hear their conversation though.

I never minded what people thought about me. But I never like people being disrespectful towards me.

I was just about to eat my bread when I heard her say “She is a slut and she only wants your money”.

I ate my bread slowly but did hear her wincing in pain. I looked towards her to find a big cut in her cheek and the knife stuck into the wooden frame beside her. Blood was oozing out of her cheek and she winced in pain holding her cheek stopping her bleeding.

“I wonder who did that to her” I muttered feeling Dylan’s eyes on me.

“What?” I snapped and he averted his eyes back to Lily who was still wincing in pain.

“Did you do that?” I heard Bell asking the question to Blake.

“No! Are you mad? I didn’t ” Blake whispered.

I kept eating my bread and took the knife buttering another piece.

“What the hell!” I heard Lily scream and with that she ran out of the room clicking her heels on the floor.

“Can you please pass me that plate please?” I asked Cole and he nodded passing me the plate.

I watched Dylan staring at me for some minutes and he turned his back walking out of the room taking long strides.

After the breakfast I came to meet many people in the house but the question kept lingering in my mind why are they all staying in one house. I even found a room filled with weapons like archery, shooting and what not all.

“They are seriously not some criminal group or something right?” I asked making her laugh at me.

“No we are not” she said and I followed her wherever she went.

She was walking ahead of me when she suddenly stopped making me to bump into her shoulders.

“Oh sorr-” I began but stopped when saw her quietly standing and nodding her head.

“Whats with this people standing quietly and nodding their head” I snapped at my inner voice.

“How would I know that you freak” my inner voice taunted me.

“How come you don’t know you should know” I retorted back to my inner voice.

“Are you mad? You forgot that me is you and you are me” she told me and I mentally kicked myself for fighting with my inner voice which is me.

I am mad.

“Uh Alpha is calling you” Bell told me snapping out of her little moment.

“How do you know that? Are you using a Bluetooth devi-” she cut me off by taking hold of my hand and dragging me with her.

“Quick! He will get angry of we are late” she told me as she dragged me upstairs which I remember as his office.

“He needs to talk to you alone” she said and before I could question anything she knocked at the door and pushed me inside and closing the door she went away leaving all alone with the King Kong.

I gulped audibly but nevertheless dared to look at him and found him leaning against his wooden desk staring at me as if I have stolen his Five million dollar.

Nonsense!

I stared at him waiting for him to say something and when he didn’t utter a word I spoke up “Hey! What’s up?”

He frowned but nevertheless composed himself and spoke “Did you do that?”

“What did I do?” I asked scowling at his question.

“Don’t act innocent. I know that you are the one throwing that knife at Lily” he said walking towards me.

“And what makes you say that?” I asked shoving my hands in my pant pockets.

“I asked Bell, Cole and Blake and they didn’t do that. So, as the only remaining person is you I’m guessing it was your work” he finished standing before me.

“What will you do if I say I didn’t do that” I asked directly staring into his eyes.

“Well you are lying” he narrowed his eyes at me.

“The question is how did you do that? You just managed to cut only her skin. Are you trained or something?” He asked folding his hands on his chest.

“No! I think it happened by chance” I said and turned to leave but stopped saying “or may be I just missed her eye” and with that I opened the door and made my way back to my room.

Reaching my room I threw my top on the bed and changed into a vest top and wore a short spandex.

Closing my eyes, I relaxed a bit and then stood on my hands with my legs in the air and started doing my daily work out of push ups with both hands and sometimes with one hand.

****

Chapter 9

Aderyn Pov

It's been three weeks since I've staying here and to say I'm liking it is really something new. Never had I grown attached to people so easily as I have been now.

Bell has managed to grow closer to me in this story period of time and the most funny part is that I've been taken care by the people who were living here. I liked that feeling though where you find yourself important. Apart from all this, only two people have managed to irritate me.

First is that Blonde Chic Lilly and second one is the bastard, Dylan. I don't know what problem he had from me but every time I met he would give me his cold shoulder treatment and he even scolds me taunting me I'm a kid and weak what not.

I'm tired of this two. The problem is Lily likes Dylan, at least that is what I heard till now. So, I don't understand where the problem lies. Lily likes Dylan. Dylan likes his work and people. His people liked me.

What a strange triangle.

"Do you know why buildings can't jump?" Blake asked me playing his video game.

I scratched my chin thinking and then grinned finding the answe "Because buildings aren't Kangaroo" I screamed making him laugh and we both did the hi-fi. Then burst out laughing.

"What nonsense" I heard Dylan mutter as he went past the living room towards his room. I still don't get it, How could he hear whatever we were talking from such a large distance.

"Don't mind him. He is always like that. Grumpy" Blake whispered and I muttered "Like a grumpy old man".

We burst out laughing. We were really Idiots. We both were habituated of Lame jokes and worst to worry jokes would made us cry from laughing hard. Everyone finds this weird but who cares to what they think.

"Where is Bell?" I asked him sitting next to him.

He shrugged his shoulder in response and continued playing. I haven't seen her from last two days. I wonder what she was doing.

I got up from my place and went out of the room leaving Blake alone. I was walking towards the hallway when my phone rang. I took it out from my pant pockets and looked at the caller screen to find an unknown number flashing.

“What is it?” I asked to the person in the phone.

“Just called to remind you abou-” he began but I cut him off saying “I know. You don’t need to remind me and don’t call me ever. Didn’t I told you earlier not to call me?” I snapped and heard him sighing.

“Listen you don’t need to snap at me. I’m just doing my work” he finished and with that I hung up on him disconnecting the line.

“Moron” I whispered shoving the phone back into my pant pocket.

I began to walk but stopped dead in my tracks when I heard a voice speaking “Who shouldn’t call you?”

I turned around to find Dylan Standing near the door eyeing me suspiciously.

“You were listening to my conversation?” I asked my voice dead.

“Who was he?” He asked again as he began to walk towards me. I remained glued to the position my expression neutral.

“It’s none of your business” I spat and watched as his demeanor began to change as quickly I said that. He began to shake violently while his hands were balled into a fist. Anger began to radiate from his body as he watched me like I have done some crime.

“Don’t talk to me like that” I growled yes growled like a dog. I watched silently as he fought against himself trying to get into control.

“I will talk however I want and don’t you dare spy on me next time” I snapped and the next moment I found myself plastered against the wall his large hand gripping on my neck suffocating me.

“Don’t talk to me like that again and next time I will not spare you. As long as you are here it is my Damn business to know everything that is going on” he said through gritted teeth and I held on his hand trying to free myself.

He kept gripping my neck hard and suddenly I began to feel dizzy because of lack of oxygen and finally with utmost difficulties I stammered “Le-av-e M-Me”.

Hearing my voice he left me as immediately he could and I gasped for air bending down holding my neck. I coughed a little and finally when I was able to breathe I stood straight looking directly into to his eyes.

“First of all, I’m not staying here because of my wish. I was literally” I said air quoting the word “Kidnapped”.

“So your rules and regulations do not work upon me and I don’t give a shit what you want and don’t want” I said slowly and clearly for him to get it to his thick skull.

“And next time when you touch me, I can ensure you that it will really bad for you” I said glaring at him with dead voice.

I watched as his expression changed to neutral while I spoke to him. He was back to his real cold self. He opened his mouth to say something but stopped when his eyes fell on my neck.

I was sure it would’ve been bruised by now. I trailed my finger against my neck and winced as immediate I touched the skin. I watched as he began to look worried and his expression changed to pain. He seemed like he would cry anytime soon.

This guy seriously needs a psychiatrist.

He lifted his hands up which I guessed was to touch me but before he could, I turned on my heels and began to walk out from there.

“How dare he behave like that with me” I muttered to myself touching my sore neck.

I walked back to my room and found myself directly standing in front of my window examining the skin on my neck.

It surely did bruised and might I say Very badly. Finger marks were formed on my neck and place where he gripped turned black. I sighed seeing my form. Bruises are not new to me and I’m not afraid of them.

But I don’t know why I feel like crying for him treating me this way. I have been treated worse than this then why am I feeling so lonely and sad?

I feel like a piece of mine has hurt me. Why the hell am I feeling this way?

I looked at myself in the mirror to find my eyes already watering thinking so much.

“Tears?” I whispered eyeing my eyes as they began to water and soon tears began to roll down my cheeks like a stream of river.

It was really surprising because it had been many days or years when I cried like this. I felt hurt and at the same time shocked. So many emotions at same time.

I stared at myself in the mirror as the tears silently felt into my shirt soaking on it.

“Am I pregnant?” I whispered.

Suddenly I burst out laughing holding my stomach. I am really mad. It really surprised me how I could change my mood so quickly.

I composed myself and buttoned up the first button of my shirt to hide the marks. Untying my hair, I combed it and successfully managed to hide those marks completely.

“Can’t believe he did this to me” I whispered to myself and walked out of the bathroom.

Suddenly I was crashed into a hug.

“Oh my Lord Adie are you alright?” Bell asked worriedly. She pulled back from the hug and eyes me everywhere.

“I can’t belief that the Alpha could do such thing to yo-” I cut her off saying “What did he do?”

She stared at me with a confused expression and spoke “Alpha tried to hurt you right?”

“When?” I asked her and watched as she furrowed her eyebrows clearly confused.

“He didn’t?” She questioned and I shook my head negatively.

“But I heard tha-” she began but I cut her off holding her arm “Do you find anything wrong with me?” I asked and she began to eye me everywhere.

“No?” She answered which sounded like a question.

“That’s because nothing happened as you all are thinking” I spoke shoving my hands into my pant pocket. A habit of mine whenever I lied.

Every time I lied, my fingers would start to twitch weirdly gaining attentions. I tend to hide it into my pant pockets every time I lied.

She exhaled a breath. Her left hand on her forehead and the other on her hip. “These people I tell you” she whispered but I heard her.

“Which people?” I asked rubbing my arm with my palm.

“Actually I heard from a guy that he saw you and Alpha fighting and he even saw Alpha hurting you” she said and I pursed my lips nodding.

“That’s absurd. Why would be hurt me?” I asked and she nodded “I know right. People just need some rumors to gossips about” she huffed and went towards my bed sitting in it.

“Speaking of people, where were you from this last two days?” I asked and watched as she tensed hearing by question.

“Everything alright?” I asked eyeing her tense form.

“Yes everything alright. I just went for patrolling” she said and sighed but suddenly her eyes widened registering what she just blurted out.

“Patrolling? You are a police officer?” I asked and she shooked her negatively.

“Not patrolling I mean shopping” she changed her words but I didn’t buy it that easily.

Nevertheless, I nodded and went to sit next to her. We chatted for some hours and then she went out of my room saying that she had some work to do.

I sat their on the bed watching out of the window. It was time of spring. I could see trees already beginning to shed their leaves. I loved spring season.

I looked at time to see it’s already give in the evening.

I wore my black jacket over my shirt and made my way out of the room. It had been a habit of mine from my childhood to go for a walk every evening. It would calm my mind down.

I walked out of the house and made my way towards the same path which I took everyday. It was a forest area which was covered with big trees which were now shedding their leaves. Yellow leaves fell on the ground covering the ground like a bed sheet. I walked on the leaves. A beautiful view to see as the sun rays fell on the leaves making it look gold.

I remember how sometimes my dad would join me for walking. He would talk about his day and together we would walk holding hands.

I was walking for I don’t know from how many minutes but suddenly stopped dead in my tracks when I heard a voice of twigs breaking. I turned around to see nobody around but I was trained better to believe my ears than my eyes.

“I know you are there. So whoever you are just come out. There is no point of hiding” I said and waited for the person to come out.

I was sure my eyes would have flied out my socket seeing the person.

Dylan.

He came out from behind a tree and I watched as he pursed his leaves shoving his hands into his jacket pockets.

I composed myself and raised an eyebrow waiting for him to say something.

“Now he had started to stalk you after eavesdropping you” I thought to myself and mentally rolled my eyes.

“Are you going to say something?” I asked waiting for him to speak.

“Just wanted to go for a walk” he spoke and I watched him accusingly. Before I could scream or throw questions his direction he walked past me towards the way where I was going beforehand.

I stood their watching his retreating back shocked by his attitude.

“This man is seriously something” I muttered and sighed zipping up my jacket.

“How long are you planning to stand there?” He spoke and I looked towards his direction finding him already looking at me.

“Is he planning me to join him?” I muttered and to my shock he heard me from such a distance because he simply said “Isn’t it obvious?”

I stared at him for some minutes but nevertheless walked to him and silently we began to walk.

We never spoke to each other. There was a comforting silence around us and we walked enjoying each other’s company.

“Well this is new” my inner voice spoke to which I replied “New and interesting”.

****

Chapter 10

Dylan Pov

Whatever I did was wrong. Totally wrong. I shouldn't have done that. How could I do that?

I just couldn't control myself. She was talking to someone and the way she spoke to the person in her phone was like as if she was trying to hide something.

I should've stopped myself. How could I do that?

I went to such extent of hurting my own mate. It was wrong of me totally wrong. Racking a hand throw my hair I inhaled deeply and sat on my chair. I sighed leaned against the headrest of the chair closing my eyes.

The scene where I gripped her neck tightly flashed before my eyes and I jerked up from my seat. Throwing the papers and everything that was in my desk I walked towards the glass window and leaned against it closing my eyes.

"It was wrong. So wrong of me" I muttered to myself. My heart aching at the fact that I was the one who did that. My wolf angry upon me for committing such a crime.

Opening my eyes, I looked out of the glass to see the trees already shedding their leaves. It was the time of spring. I loved spring season. I watched silently towards the tress which were shedding their leaves on the ground.

It was just when I noticed a figure walking towards the forest. My wolf began to beg me to go to her and that is what I did. I didn't went to her because of my wolf. I went their because of my heart. I wanted to make sure she was alright. She was a human after all. She would've broke down after that.

Somehow, I found myself taking long strides and even running out of the house, my eyes searching for her. I followed her scent and soon found her walking into the forest. I stopped in my track and began to think how to approach her.

"Should I say sorry" I muttered and heard my wolf snapping at me "off course you fool. Go and apologize".

Taking a deep breath I took a step but stopped when unintentionally I stood on a bunch of dried twig. The sound of the twig breaking under my foot was so loud that even a human could hear that in such a silent forest and I doubted Aderyn not to hear it.

As expected, she stopped walking and turned around. She could see me because I was behind a tree but when i heard asking "Who is there? Come out" and all I couldn't stop myself from walking to her.

I came out of my hidden place and watched as she gave me a shocked expression.

"What are you doing here?" She asked composing her shocked state eyeing me accusingly.

"Just wanted to go for a walk" I replied whatever that came into my mind.

I knew by her expression that she was ready throw questions and insults my way so, not letting her speak anything I walked past her and closed my eyes when I finally crossed her.

"This man is seriously something" I heard her mutter and smirked biting my tongue.

"How long are you planning on to stand there?" I asked and heard her mutter "Is he planning me to join him?" to which I replied shocking her "Isn't it obvious?"

She stood there for some minutes watching me. I was sure that she was going to turn around and leave but absolutely surprising me she walked past me and I joined her walking silently with her.

I wanted to speak something ask her if she was alright but chose to stay quiet maintaining the distance between us which could never allow us to come closer.

I liked whatever was going on and I planned on to enjoy as the way it is.

It was better than having any hopes or something which could break hearts later. It was better like this.

After walking together for hours, we came back to the house. We both separated without speaking anything to each other. She walked towards her room and I walked towards mine.

I took a shower and changed into something comfortable. Lying on my bed, I stared blankly at the ceiling.

The days event flashed before my eyes. Our fighting, our walking, our silence everything. My mind began to picture her face even though I didn't want to. I groaned and turned around to my side lying sideways, my elbow under my head.

"Why do I feel as if you are hiding something Aderyn?" I found myself asking to no one.

"Aderyn" I liked the name. It was a unique name. I liked how her name rolled perfectly out of my tongue. The name suited her personality.

"I wonder who are there in your family" I muttered and found this really strange that she has never spoken about her family since the day she has started to live here.

“Doesn’t her family search for her?” I thought and got up from the bed.

Unknowingly, again I found myself walking towards her room. My foot were walking on there own. It was like I didn’t have any control over them.

However, I stopped on my tracks and cursed myself. “What are you doing Dylan walking to her?”

I turned around to leave but again looked back to find myself already near her room.

I wanted to see her. I don’t know why but I just wanted to see her. My heart began to rise and I ran towards her room.

“What’s going on? Is she alright?” I asked and heard my wolf howling.

Without knocking, I walked in to find the room dark. I turned on the lights and found her lying in her bed. I sighed in relief watching her sleep but soon my when my wolf asked me “Why isn’t she waking up when the lights were switched on?” I began to panic and ran to her.

Sweats were forming on her forehead but nevertheless I heard her heartbeat which was beating abnormally fast. Maybe she was having a nightmare.

Her breathing started to rise and then only I noticed a small bottle which was kept on the table beside her bed.

Frowning I took the bottle into my hands and read the label to find it as the sleeping tablets.

I scowled reading the label.

“Sleeping Pills?” I whispered and eyes Aderyn who was still sleeping with uneven breathing.

“Why do you need sleeping pills?” I asked her knowing that she couldn’t hear me.

My eyes fell on her neck and I clenched my palms into balls seeing the bruises. It was caused by me. I should have been careful. This was the reason why I stayed away from her.

Lifting my hand I trailed my finger on her bruise wishing it to fade away. My fingers tingling due to the mate bond. Her skin was so soft and flawless.

I watched as her breathing began to even and instantly I knew the answer to that.

The mate Bonding.

My touch was soothing her. Her breathing returned to normal and she snuggled more into the pillow. Sighing, I got up from my place and covered her using the duvet.

With one last glance towards her way, I switched off the lights and exited her room closing the door behind me.

The question was still lingering in my mind “Why does she need sleeping pills to sleep?”

I made my way back to my room and lying in my bed I tried to shut myself down to rest, to sleep.

Chapter 11

Aderyn POV

I groaned when I found my phone beeping loudly. Stretching my hand I took from the phone stand and checked to find a text notification.

The text message was as usually from an unknown number and it read "Next round will be held next month. Be there. It's a really big one".

I deleted the message and sat on the bed, leaning against the headboard.

What a tremendous life I had.

I cursed my fate for giving me such a life but at the same I'm glad that I am living such a beautiful life. I looked towards my left side of the bed to see my family photo and reached for it.

"I miss you Mom, Dad and Nancy. I wish to see you soon" I murmured and placed a kiss on the photo frame and with a last glance, I kept it aside.

Getting up from the bed, I made the bed and went inside the bathroom to do my business. I took a long shower because I don't have any work to do, and applied shampoo in my hair. Wrapping a towel around myself, I stood in front of the mirror and using my palm, I gently cleaned away the fog that was formed in the mirror.

"Hmm I need a haircut" I whispered taking a lock of wet hair in my fingers and flipping it backwards.

Wrapping a towel in my hair, I went out of the room and walked into my walk in closet. I chose to wear a black ripped jeans with black cowl neck top with long sleeves. After my hair was dry, I tied a neat ponytail and applied some moisturizer to my face and gloss to my lips.

Slipping into my shoes, I took my Card, phone and went out of the room.

Bell and I were suppose to go out today for the first time of this place. I wasn't excited at all. Because I'm not a kid. Moreover I'm going with her because I needed to buy something and I hope wherever she took me, the things should be available there.

"Hey Adie" She greeted when she found me standing in the hallways.

"Hi" I replied.

I see her wearing a floral dress which reached her mid thigh and a shrug upon it. She was wearing boots and hair was as usual tied up.

“You look Good” I said and she smiled replying “You too”.

“Now let’s go” I said and turned around to leave but stopped when she said “wait! wait”.

“What now?”

“Uh we need to go to the Alpha first”.

“What?”

“Yeah. He needs to know where we are”.

“What nonsense. Now we need permission to go out?”

“Uh no just he needs to know where we are. It’s for safety”.

“Okay fine” I muttered and inwardly spoke “Safety my ass”.

We went to his room.

“Why are we going to his room? He must be in his office right at this time of the day?” I asked confused.

I have never been to his room and I am not even interested to pay a visit on this lovely day. If anything I will get seeing him, then it’s irritation and headache.

“No he worked late at night yesterday so he is resting in his room now” at said and gave me a small smile to which I returned a small smile of mine.

Reaching his room, Bell knocked at his door while I chose to stand five foot away from his room. Bell can tell him where we were going. I am just not interested. So I took out my phone and clicked on every notification I had deleting it after I read it.

The door opened but I did not bother to look up.

“What is it?” He asked his voice husky. Probably for the fact that he was sleeping.

“Uh I’m here because” again with the stuttering thing. What is wrong with Bell? She stutters a lot.

I sighed and dared to look up only to find the reason why Bell was stuttering. There stood with a body of an Abercrombie Model Dylan with no shirts and only with a Basket ball shorts that hunged low in his waist.

“Idiot” I muttered and that was when his eyes fell on me and it widened for a few seconds and then it went back to its normal size and then the nerve of him.

He was checking me out. A smirk formed on his lips and he licked his lips eyeing me everywhere. He stare burning holes wherever he looked. I walked to him and stood next to where Bell was standing and crossed my hands over my chest.

“Eyes up here Mister” I snapped and he looked up and tried to compose himself.

“Pervert” I inwardly thought to which my inner voice replied ” Yeah a Sexy pervert”.

“Now don’t you dare start on this” I snapped at her and she shut her mouth.

“We are going out” I said in a monotone.

“Where?” He asked and I was just about to give him a piece of my mind when Bell held my arm stopping me from speaking.

“To the wings Alpha. We are going for shopping and Adie also needs to buy something” She said and this time she did not stutter much to my relief.

“Shopping?” He asked and I thought if he was deaf or something.

“Okay go but be back before evening” he said that looking into my eyes.

My heart skipped a beat when I took in his words. Since that day, it has been a daily habit of us walking during the evening silently with each other. We don’t speak to each other nor do we wait for each other. We carry on our walking and whoever was late would be joining in by catching each other wherever we are.

I averted my gaze and simply nodded my head.

“Okay let’s go” I said holding Bell by her hand.

“Wait!” Dylan said making us stop.

He went back into his room and came back with something in his hand.

“Use this” he said giving a card to me.

“I don’t need your money. I have my own” I snapped at him glaring at him.

“Just take it” Bell said and I was just about to argue when Dylan held my hand which immediately sent tingles and shivers down my body. I jerked my hand back looking at the place where he touched me.

“What is this?” I whispered and looked up to find him already looking at me with a small smile playing on his lips.

“Just take it. Keep it whether you use it or not” he said looking deep into my eyes and I nodded as if I was hypnotized by his words.

Nevertheless, I took the card and slipped it into my back pocket of my jeans.

“Lets go?” I asked Bell to which she nodded.

Bell was the first to walk away and I turned around to leave but not before giving a last glance to Dylan.

Just I was about to turn when the pervert did a shocking thing making me shocked to my core.

Spank!

I was sure that my eyes were of the size of the saucers. He spanked me. I came out of my shocked state and glared at him.

“What did you just do?” I asked slowly daring him to lie.

“What did I do?” He asked looking neutral as if he didn’t have any Idea about what I was talking.

“Don’t act smart” I warned and to complete shock he had this nerve to whisper “whatever” and he closed the door right on my face.

“Open the door you moron, you pig, you pervert” I shouted banging on his door.

“What happened?” Bell came back to me asking me worriedly.

I gave up on my banging and sighed composing myself.

“Nothing” I whispered.

“Fine Dylan Fine” I thought to myself and with a last glare on his door we walked away.

All the while, I still couldn’t belief that he did that. How dare him?

That moron.

We walked out of the house and walked towards the back of the house.

“Wait! Where are we going? Aren’t we taking the car?” I asked Bell confused.

“No we will walk” she replied.

“What?” I asked and she asked me to “Relax and just follow me”.

Giving up on her secretive speech, I kept my mouth shut and followed her. We went to the backside of the house. We walked into the woods and walked till we were out of the woods.

We walked across a stream and I was gawked looking at the place. It was so beautiful. Away from pollution and noise.

So silent yet so beautiful. A scenic beauty. Nature.

Finally we came across a meadow and after walking for fifteen minutes we met the end and we reached a concrete road. We made our way on it and I found vehicles moving past us in that road. Finally we reached a small town.

“A town?” I asked bewildered.

“Yes and it goes under our area” Bell said smiling at my expression.

“Its also belongs to your Alpha?” I asked and she nodded.

We walked into the town. I watched kids were playing rolling tyres and people walking in groups. Shops, houses and everything a town needs.

“Where are we going?” I asked and looked back at me saying “To the mall”.

“What? You have a mall here?” I asked surprised.

“Yeah!” She replied and we continued walking towards this mall which she was talking about.

We reached the place and yes it was a mall but not a big one. I smiled satisfied seeing the mall.

“Lets go in” she said excited and I gave her a smile following her into the mall.

“First Let’s go the cloth section” she said more like screamed and I nodded following her. The mall wasn’t that packed with customers or people.

We walked in a cloths shop and Immediately we were greeted by the salesgirl who had raven hair and was small compared to us.

“Welcome” she greeted with a plastered smile on her lips “What can I do for you?” She asked.

“Dress and skirts” Bell replied to which she nodded and was about to turn but I stopped her asking “Jeans and Tops”.

“Oh! That way Ma’am” she replied showing me the direction.

Bell scowled at me asking “Why don’t you ever wear a dress?”

“Everyone has their own choice Bell” I replied to which she nodded understanding.

I made my towards the Jeans section and according to my size, I took the Jeans. Black, Faded Black and a dark blue ripped Jeans is what I chose. I decided to try them and found every one fitting.

Satisfied, I went to the Tops section and took three to four pieces. I went to the counter and gave the clothes to the girl behind the desk.

“Please keep this here. I am going but something else from the other shop and I have a friend in here so if she searches for me then please tell her that I will be right back” I told the sales and she nodded taking the clothes from me and folding it neatly.

“And make the bill. I will just pay for it when I’m back” she nodded hesitantly and I walked out of the shop.

I needed to buy some important things.

I walked towards the entry of the mall looking for a map. I got the map of the mall and found the stores which I needed.

Walking towards the direction exactly shown by the map finally I got the store.

Walking in I was met by a salesman who eyed me with lust then with a smirk.

“Babes this store is not for you. The Victoria Secrets is right to the next” he said all the while checking me out.

“Show me the Gloves section” I asked avoiding his nonsense.

“I told yo-” I began but when I gave him my look daring him to open his mouth he stopped in the middle and gulped visibly.

“That way” he said without looking into my eyes.

I went to the direction and found the gloves.

“Not the full one” I said to the salesman who was trailing like a tail behind me.

“For whom do you need Ma’am?” He asked and I replied without looking at him “for me”.

I did not find him asking anything else but did heard him gulping again. I found the gloves which I needed and took it giving it to the salesman.

“The sandbags?” I asked him and without daring to talk nonsense he showed me the way.

I took the sandbags. I had to take more than one and after taking everything that I required, I went to the the counter, the salesman trying to walk with the things in his hands. The Man in the counter eyed me and the things that I took weirdly and then began to billing.

I payed the amount, and gave my address. I couldn’t take such loads with me carrying it. Because I walked here and I couldn’t carry all these back to the house. Nevertheless, I took the small bags and made sure that they deliver the bags to me on time.

I walked back to the store where I left Bell and found her going towards the counter.

“Hey Where were you?” She asked eyeing my bags.

“Ahh nothing just to buy the daily stuffs” I replied and went to the counter.

The girl gave me a smile probably finding me back and I returned a smile of my own and payed for the things.

We took out bags and began to walk when Bell stopped on her tracks taking her phone out. She checked something and looked everywhere.

I found two bulky guys walking towards us.

“Hey Bell” both of them greeted and looked towards me doing the bowing thing “Lun-” that began but where stopped by Bell who was stuttered again and handed them our bags.

“Hey! What are you doing?” I asked confused upon why she was giving our bags to them.

“Alpha send them to us to carry our bags” she whispered smiling at me.

“What?” I asked “Does he do that for every girl in the house?” I asked crossing my hands over my chest.

“No only for yo-” she stopped mid sentence, her eyes wide.

“What did you just say?” I asked narrowing my eyes.

“No nothing. Let’s eat uh you must be hungry” she said changing the topic.

I nodded not trying to ask her anything else. I was hungry.

The guys whose name I came to know as Jeff and Billy went away with our bags. I tried to stop them and asked them to join us for eating but they denied saying that they have works to do and they went away with our bags.

“So what do you want to order?” She asked and I want through the menu.

I ordered everything that I found interesting while the waiter scribbled it down in his notepad eyeing me all the while like I was an Alien.

“Wow! For a human you eat a lot” Bell said her eyes twinkling.

“Excuse me?” I questioned daring her to say anything upon my eating habits.

She bit back a smile and chose to keep quiet.

“But what did she mean by for a human? Isn’t she a human?” My inner voice asked and I eyed her while she was going through the menu.

“May be she isn’t” I whispered and she looked up at me with a raised eyebrow and I smiled to which she returned of her own.

After eating, we stayed for some more hours in the mall and then we walked back through the same way from where we came and finally we reached the house.

I found my bags along with the bags which were from the other shop on my bed. I kept the things in my closet and jumped on my bed closing my eyes for some minutes.

“From Tomorrow” I whispered to myself.

Something poked my butt from my pant pocket and I took it out finding the card which Dylan gave me. I mentally made a note to return it to him in the evening.

In the evening, when I was walking, Dylan joined me after ten minutes I being late. I stared at him and pursed my lips as usually not saying anything we continued to walk in silence.

That was when I reminded myself of the card and I stopped in my track fishing out the card from my pant pocket.

“Here” I said giving me the card.

“Did you use it?” He asked and I shooked my head negatively making him sigh.

“Didn’t I gave you this and told you to us-” I cut him off saying “I have my own money and I don’t need your card so please next time don’t offer me your money” I replied curtly and with a tone “speak no nonsense to me”.

He shooked his head muttering something under his breath and shoved the card inside his pocket.

We walked back to the house and we were met by Cole and Blake in the way.

“Hi” they greeted watching me confusedly with their Alpha.

“Hey!” I replied and watched as Dylan just gave them a nod.

Rolling my eyes, I excused myself while they continued talking and made my way back to my room.

What a day I had.

*****

Chapter 12

“What did you just say?” I asked narrowing my eyes.

“What did I say?” Dylan replied quietly eating his Chicken pasta acting innocent.

I was sure that I heard him speak “She is a Virgin, I can smell it” to Blake.

“You see I’m not deaf here, do you understand,” I said through gritted teeth.

I was shocked on the matter that how did he know me being a Virgin? and what in the world does he mean by the statement “I can smell it”?

I will surely go insane if I stay here any longer. Just three weeks more and then I will be out of here. I will be living my life as I was living earlier, travelling, having fun. Sure, I will miss Bell, Blake and Cole and I have decided to stay in contact with them.

They have become very close to me in this short period of time so, I have decided to stay in contact with them. But not with Dylan. I will never miss him nor will I stay in contact with him.

“Just eat your thing and stop irritating me” he said irritated.

The nerve of him. He is getting me irritated here and he is saying that I am irritating him.

“I’m irritating you? You are the one who is irritating me. Can’t you just do your work ignoring me or talking about me” I said glaring at him.

“I will do whatever I want. I will talk about you if I want” he said with a smug look on his face.

“I will slap you if I hear any more word about me” I warned him and watched him as he narrowed his eyes towards me.

“Oh really?” He dared.

“Try me” I said crossing my arms around my chest giving him a innocent smile. I rubbed my palms showing him that they were itching to slap his face.

He glared at me but nevertheless chose to keep quiet. Finally I ate my breakfast in silence and got up from the chair walking out of the room with Bell following me.

“Bell I need to tell you something” I said in a monotone. I wanted to tell her that I was here only for a month.

“Yeah?” She asked but I shooked my head negatively. Maybe I will tell her later.

“Ah nothing important” I told her and she nodded.

“Why is Dylan like this?” I asked her and noticed her visibly gulping.

“Uh it’s becaus-” she was cut off by a giggling sound.

I raised my eyebrow and looked everywhere. I found a girl hiding behind a table, peeping her head out and giggling at me.

“Hello Little one” I said bending down and smiling at her.

She walked out of her hidden place and walked to me. She gestured me to bent down to her level and with furrowed eyebrows I did what she asked me to do.

As soon as I bent down she swiftly placed a kiss on my right cheek and ran away giggling.

A smile formed on my lips and I touched the place where at kissed me.

“What was that for?” I asked to myself to which Bell replied “Kids love their Luna” dreamily.

“Who?” I asked confused.

“Uh I mean Guest. Kids love their guests” she corrected herself and I nodded still not buying it.

“Wait you said Kids?” I asked to which she nodded smiling.

“Yes kids” she replied.

“There are more kids in this house?” I asked suddenly excited.

“Yes. Do you want to meet them?” She asked and I nodded “Of course”.

“Well follow me” she said and began to walk. I followed her and soon we reached a door.

“Its where the kids spend their times during the day” she said and opened the door going in. I followed her and immediately laughing, giggling and shouting sounds of children filled my ears.

“Luna” They all shouted in chorus and ran to me.

“Luna?” I asked confused and looked at Bell for help. She bit down on her lips and shrugged her shoulders.

“Hellow Kids” I said excited.

“Hello Luna” They all shouted in chorus while some ran to me and hugged my legs.

I chuckled and found the same girl who kissed me back there in the hall. She was hugging my leg and giggling. I smiled down at her and picked her up hugging her.

“What’s your name?” I asked and placed a kiss on her hand.

“Evangeline” she said excited and wrapped her hands around my neck.

“Aw such a beautiful name” I cooed making her smile.

“Wha- what’s your name?” She asked curiously.

“Its Aderyn” I told her laughed a little when she couldn’t pronounce it properly.

“Okay then call me Adie” I said when she gave up pronouncing my full name.

“Adie” she tasted “That’s right” I spoke and gently put her down.

“Whose kids are they?” I asked Bell who was playing with a little boy.

“The warriors” she said and continued playing.

“Warriors?” I asked and she looked up at me.

“Warriors means Soldiers yeah Soldiers. There parents are busy protecting their territory” she told me and though I didn’t understand anything I nodded murmuring a quiet “I see”.

Soon every children began to play. They began running here and there and remained busy in doing their stuffs which the other children of their age generally did.

I was so engrossed in playing with Evangeline that I didn’t a notice a boy maybe only of four years sitting alone at the corner in a chair with a leg bandaged reading a book quietly.

I furrowed my eyebrows upon seeing his leg. I wonder what happened to him.

I left Evangeline with others and made my way to that boy who got my whole attention.

“Hi baby” I said excited pinching his chubby cheeks.

“Hello” he said in a low voice. Though he smiled at me but his smile never reached his eyes. Instantly, I felt sad for him and wanted to know the reason of his sadness.

So, I knelt down before him and kept my hands on the hand rest and gave him a smile.

“What’s your name buddy?” I asked softly and waited for him to reply.

“Ryan” he whispered and my eyes widened upon hearing the familiar name. I jolted up and stood on my legs, my breaths coming out heavy.

“Ryan” I whispered the name of my brother.

“Ryan” I whispered again and eventually the memories of our childhood played back in my mind. The day when we were happy, sad, fighting, caring everything came rushing into my mind. My heart beat began to rise and I clutched my chest feeling pain.

“Luna” I heard the kids sad voice and looked at Bell giving me a worried look.

“Are you alright Adie?” She asked me and finally catching my breath I nodded smiling at her. As soon as I smiled the kids began to smile and ran back to their places.

I looked down to see Ryan eyeing me as if he did some crime and expecting to get a punishment.

I took a deep breath and closed my eyes composing myself. Opening my eyes, I sat down before him and smiled at him.

“Why are you sitting alone Ry- uh Buddy?” I chose to use Buddy instead of his name.

“Because I can’t walk” he murmured looking down to his bandaged leg.

“What happened to your leg?” I asked him but Bell intruded answering the question for him.

“Uh his Dad saved him from wolves. It was done by a wild wolf” she spoke sadly and I nodded taking in her words.

Sure there maybe wolves around here because this house is situated surrounded by woods after all.

“And where is his Father?” I asked her to which she gave me a sad look.

“He died saving him” she told me and immediately my heart ached hearing this. I felt pain and sadness flowing through my veins. I felt a connection towards the little guy.

“Ryan” our heads turned around upon hearing someone call his name.

“Sophia” Bell smiled at the Brunette lady who smiled back at her.

“Lu- I mean Ms. Brookes” she smiled addressing me. I smiled back at her and got up shaking my hand with her “Please call me Aderyn or Adie” I told her to which she hesitantly nodded.

“Ryan baby let’s go back to our room?” The lady whose name was Sophia asked Ryan to which he nodded saying “Yes Mom”.

She cradled up Ryan into her arms and gave me a smile. I bid Goodbye to both of them and they went away out from the room.

“I feel bad” I whispered and as if Bell heard me she nodded her head agreeing with me.

In my room, I changed my dress into my vest and Spandex. I tied my hair into a ponytail and sat on the floor meditating for some hours.

I needed some peace for my mind. Meditation was the perfect way to gain peace and that's what I was doing.

*****

Chapter 13

Aderyn Pov

As I was standing near the window, the cool breeze hitting my face made me feel better. The sweats that were forming on my forehead made me feel cold. I was panting continuously due to the heavy practice I just did.

I looked back and eyed the piece scattered in the floor. Sand everywhere. The thing which was previously called a Sandbag was scattered into pieces by none other but me. It wasn't new to me. That was the reason why I brought more than one sandbags. I looked down at my gloves and got rid of it.

I cannot practice in my room. I need a big place. Somewhere bigger and open space. I have to clean all this mess now.

It took me some minutes and finally I was done cleaning the room. Folding the already of no use sandbag, I kept it into a bag that I had. I will dispose it later.

I had been practicing since last two hours. Now I am hungry and sweaty.

I took a long shower and wrapped up my hair with a towel. I wore a black bathrobe and went out of my bathroom to my room.

I was just about to walk into my walk in closet when my eyes felt on the open drawer. I remember closing it before going for a bath. With furrowed eyebrows, I went there and checked the medicines, stuffs messily scattered. It wasn't how I kept things. I believed upon disciplinary and hence my things were always clean and neat, kept in right place.

"Bell" I spoke feeling a presence behind me.

"Ahhhh" she screamed and with an amused smile I turned around to find her holding an ointment and her another hand clutching her chest, her eyes widened.

"Ho- How did you know?" She stuttered asking me her question.

I shrugged my shoulders and with a serious look told her pointing towards the draw "clean it".

She gave me a sheepish grin but nodded and walked to the drawer arranging the things back in its place.

I glanced her way and turned around walking inside the walk in closet. I chose to wear a slacks today with long sleeves and baggy Brown shirt. My hair was damp so I left it open to let it dry on its own.

“Alpha wants to see you” she spoke out of nowhere.

“What for?” I snapped. I hated hearing anything about him.

“I don’t know”she shrugged her shoulders.

“No wait! Tell me how did you know that he wants to see me when you didn’t even use a phone?” I asked her suspiciously and she stared at me for some minutes probably thinking of an appropriate answer

“He told me when I was coming here. I remembered it now. It just slip out of my mind” she told me and sat on the bed, flipping channels in Tv.

“When does he wants to” I said air quoting the words “see me?” I asked to which she gave me an amused look.

“After an hour” she spoke and I nodded flopping on to the bed next to her.

When I found my hair completely dry, I braided it sideways. I wore my canvas and we both went out of the room after locking the door, we went to “see” the Alpha Idiot.

Upon reaching his room, I noticed some guys. They were talking to Dylan and as usual Dylan was throwing orders on them. We waited for their conversation to get over.

After five minutes of waiting, finally the body builder dudes went away but not before throwing a glance our way.

“Alpha” Bell spoke and he signaled us to come in.

We went in and waited for him to speak.

“Sit” he told us and we quietly sat on the chair while he sat on his behind his wooden desk.

“Why do you wanted to” I asked air quoting the words “see me” sweetly making Bell choking a laugh.

“Miss Brooke-” he began but I cut him off “Call me Aderyn”. How many days was he planning on to maintain the formalities?

He gave me a look and spoke “Miss Brookes” making me roll my eyes.

“Miss Brookes I have appointed a trainer for you” he told me and I have him a look as if he had two horns in his head.

“What trainer?” I asked my voice suspicious.

“Trainer means he will teach you how to fight” he told me and I couldn’t control myself. I busted out laughing, clutching my stomach.

He kept quiet and gave me a weird look while Bell touched my arm trying to silent me.

Finally when I was done, I composed myself saying a quiet “Sorry” and questioned “Trainer? Fight? What for?”

“Miss Brookes we have loads of enemy and I don’t think that we will be always present to save you from them. Hence, I have decided to train you. At least you should know the basic so that you can put up a fight when you are in trouble till we reach you” he told me and I seriously wanted to get up from my place and slap him across his face.

“What if I deny to train?” I asked him leaning against my chair, Bell giving me a pleading look to stop.

“Then I am afraid that I have to give you security. You cannot go out of your room without security guards” he told me and gave me a smirk knowing that I will never agree upon this.

“Fine I will” I said air quoting again “Train”. He gave me a satisfied look and was about to speak something but stopped when I showed him my palms to stop.

“Only when you give me an answer” I told him, my friendly behavior long gone, with a serious look warning him not to lie.

His expression changed to a surprising one but as usual he masked it quickly as it came.

“Answers?” He spoke and I nodded.

“What type of Enemies do you have and why do you have enemies and what is the real reason behind this training?” I spoke and I was sure I saw him getting tensed under my gaze.

He never expected me to ask such questions for sure.

“Enemies uh you will know soon” he told me and I was really irritated.

Though I expected him to give me appropriate answer but somehow I found myself getting irritated.

I gave him a cold look and he averted his gaze to some of his papers that were lying in his desk.

“Mr Bishop” I spoke and he looked up at me with a raised eyebrow.

I stared at him for some seconds but said “Nothing”.

He gave me an questioning look and I was sure he wanted to know what I wanted to ask but he never pushed.

“Take her to the Gym room after Thirty minutes” Dylan spoke more like ordered Bell and she nodded.

“Miss Brookes you can wear something uh you know appropriate for the training” though I wanted to roll my eyes I nodded.

“That’s all” he said and we both got up from our seats and began to exit.

“Aderyn” he called and I looked back at him surprised.

“Uh Don’t wear anything revealing or which would show skin” he said giving me a warning look.

Bell chuckled beside me and I began to thought what is his problem if I wear anything revealing.

I gave him a half smile and walked out of his room. Man I had to train now. What in the world does everyone in here have the problem with me?

Sighing, I walked back to my room and went through every cloth that was appropriate. I am not doing this because Dylan asked me but the fact that I wanted a bigger room for practice. There is profit in this. I will be practicing with the trainers that means the best hence I will be improvising more.

Generally I never wore revealing clothes hence I don’t even have any. So, I decided to wear a half sleeve black camisole and above it a black tank top. I matched it with a Pink fit sports slacks and slipped on my shoes. I made pleats in my hair and tied it back so, that it wouldn’t disturb me while training.

I checked myself on the mirror and found myself ready. With a satisfactory smile I waited for Bell to take me to this Gym room.

*****

Chapter 14

I walked with Bell as she bounced up and down excited for the Training session.

“Why are you dressed like that? I thought that the Alpha guy wants only me to train” I asked confused to see her wearing pink tank top with black fit slacks and her black canvas.

“I know but I want to join in too” an said clapping her hands in excitement.

I chuckled seeing her act like a kid but nodded anyways.

Finally, we reached the Gym room and I could hear some noises coming from inside it. Noises of someone punching a Sandbag, noises of shoes making sounds on the floor, noises of shouting or counting numbers.

We barged in through the door and the first thing that I saw was the ring in the middle of the room. There were already two large bulky man wearing shorts and sleeveless tee fighting with each other. Something irked me. The two man while fighting, were making some sounds from their mouth.

Those Sounds were familiar to me. I have heard that sounds from dogs. When I was being trained with dogs, usually they would produce such kinds of sounds when they were angry or pissed.

Why the fuck are they behaving like dogs?

“Okay that’s enough” we heard a voice speak and looked around to see a Man with French beard and tattooed arms standing near the ring commanding both of the man to stop.

The two man bowed and instantly jumped out of the ring.

“C’mon let’s go” Bell told me sounding restless to go in their.

“Relax Tiger” I told her and we both walked to the center towards the man.

I could feel stares on me. Literally, everyone present in the Gym room stopped doing whatever they were doing and now they were doing only one thing. Eyeing us with confusion evident on their faces.

“That’s Luna right?” I heard someone whisper.

“Yes what is she doing here?” Another one spoke.

“Ssh keep quiet. Didn’t Alpha told us to b-” his words couldn’t reach my ears when I concentrated on the man standing before us.

Gosh! He was so tall. Maybe 6'4 or something. He looked like he could kill anyone with just a snap of his finger. Anybody in my place would've been scared shitless.

I composed myself and gave him a smile. I was absolutely shocked as well as surprised when he returned back the smile of his own and reached for my hand for a handshake.

"Well I shouldn't be judgmental" I reminded myself.

"Hello Luna I am your Trainer" he spoke and I nodded.

"My name is Aderyn not Luna" I corrected him to which he nodded hesitantly eyeing Bell who just shrugged her shoulders.

"Okay Aderyn, you can call me Train. Everyone in here calls me Train as I'm the trainer here" he spoke and I nodded.

"Okay Train you can also call me Adie. Everyone does" I told him and he nodded smiling.

"So Lets get you inside the ring and let's not waste anymore time" he told me and I nodded climbing and jumping inside the ring.

"So?" He asked and I raised an eyebrow questioning him back "So what?"

"Do you anything about fighting?"

I paused a little and bit down on my inner side of my lips and shooked my head negatively.

"Okay?as expected Uh let's start from the beginning then" he told me and I nodded.

"We will start from Defense. You need to Defend yourself from your enemy. If you find yourself comparisionably weak against your enemy then the only thing which could save you is Defense" he told and I rubbed the back of my neck uninterested.

Seriously I have to Defend myself now?

I never believed upon Defense because for me I am always the attacker. I loved to attack.

"Adie! Are you listening?" He asked and I found myself zoned out. I nodded and smiled sheepishly at him mouthing him a quiet "Sorry".

"Adie please be attentive" he told me and I nodded.

"Okay so let's start" he said coming towards me.

"First let's think me as your enemy. So tell me what would you have done if I attacked you?" He asked me and I raised an eyebrow thinking.

“Attack me?” I thought to myself. Nobody asked me this type of question earlier. Hence, I am confused right now.

“I would uh run” I told him unsure which caused laughter eruption from the Gym room. The people present in the Gym room found this funny.

I gave them a sarcastic laugh and crossed my arms across my chest.

“Okay? It’s true actually normally it’s Fight or Flight. So you chose flight” he told me and I nodded.

“But you need to learn how to fight. You won’t be getting opportunities every time for running away. So, putting up a good fight will be better” he told me and I sighed keeping my hands on my hips.

“Okay so let’s begin” he spoke and began to teach me the basics.

I looked around to see Bell fighting with a guy of his age very gracefully. I was surprised. I didn’t know that Bell could fight and that also so gracefully.

“Adie please concentrate here” I heard Train speak to me.

“Oh sorry” I muttered and concentrated whatever he spoke. Though it was boring, I was warming up to him.

He was a good teacher indeed. He didn’t push me and made me understand everything properly.

“See what will you do if someone holds your wrist forcefully not letting you go” he asked me and I stood uninterested but acted as if I was listening him.

“Adie I know you must be finding all this training ridiculous and boring. But please understand it’s for your own good. It will help you in future. If you won’t cooperate then I couldn’t help you” he told me and I nodded boy Inc down on my lips feeling little embarrassed.

“Okay I will concentrate from now on” i told him sincerely and he sighed nodding.

“So where was I? Yeah wrist so if anyone holds your wrist like this” he told me holding my wrist firmly but not painfully “you have to do only one thing to get out of his or her hold and that-” before he could do I did it. Using my other hand I turned his wrist opposite side causing him to unlock his hold from me.

“How did you?” He asked with widen eyes.

“Shit!” I cursed mentally.

“What?”

“How did you know this trick?”

“Uh I know it from my PE teacher yeah! My PT teacher taught all of us when we in school” I told him and though not satisfied he gave me a suspicious look and nodded.

“Is Everything going fine over here?” I heard a voice speak and I turned my head towards the direction to find Dylan standing near the door with Blake and Cole.

He took long strides and within some seconds he reached near the ring. First of all he eyed me and my dress giving me a satisfied look. I rolled my eyes and turned my head to the other side.

“Alpha” Train bowed his head and I scrunched my nose up in confusion seeing his demeanor changing so quickly before Dylan.

Dylan nodded his head and repeated his question again but this time locking his eyes with mine.

“Yes I was just teaching her the basics. She is just not paying attention maybe she is finding this boring and unnecessary” Train spoke giving me a worried look after he watched the dissatisfied look on Dylan’s face which was directed towards me.

“Is that so Miss Brookes?” Dylan asked and I shrugged my shoulders “At least I’m trying duh”.

He sighed and rubbed his forehead using his fingers as usually muttering something under his breath.

“See Miss Brookes I told you this is very important and if you do not cooperate then I am afraid I have to assign Bodyguards for you” he told me seriously and I sulked my shoulders in frustration muttering colorful words.

“Ugh Fine!” I gave up. The last thing I wanted was the bodyguards following me wherever I went.

“Just a month Adie” I muttered to myself keeping my hands on my hips. I looked towards Dylan to find him tensed and confused looking at me.

“Shit! Don’t tell me he heard me” I thought to myself.

He averted his gaze back to Train and began to talk or should I say began instructing him how he should train me.

“Miss Brookes I hope I won’t get anymore complaints against you” he spoke to me and with a sarcastic smile I replied “Yes Dad”.

He shook his head and turned around announcing “Every one please leave Train and Miss Brookes alone while they are training. I think Miss Brookes is getting uncomfortable with people surrounding her”.

Everyone present in the room nodded their head and in no time they were out of the room. Bell too went out leaving me alone with the trainer.

“All the best” Blake shouted from the Door causing me to smile. Cole waved at me and I replied with waving back at him. They both followed Dylan out of the room.

Now, I was alone in the large room with Train. I sighed keeping my hands on my hips. Dylan didn’t need to do that. I was fine with people around me and now I’m alone. That creep.

“Miss Brookes?” I heard Train speak and in no time I stopped the punch that he threw at me without any effort, only with one hand.

“I knew it” he muttered while I eyed him seriously, my playfulness long gone.

“These eyes of mine couldn’t lie me. I have been in this profession from God knows how long and I can tell only by looking at the person if he or she could fight or not” he told me eyeing my serious face.

“Your PT teacher surely did not teach you how to stop a punch” he asked me suspiciously.

“Damn” I thought to myself. I got caught.

“Thanks to your overconfidence” my inner self mocked me.

“Oh shut up” I retorted back.

I loosened my grip on his fist and let him go.

“That was my reflex action. What are you talking about?” I asked him checking my nails.

“Aderyn who are you?” He asked and I sighed rolling back my shoulders.

“No one interesting”.

*****

Chapter 15

Dylan Pov

I can swear to God that was all my wolf doing. I was so tired working day and night, that I finally chose to take some rest. My sleep was disturbed by someone knocking on my door.

Groaning, I got up from my bed not caring what I was wearing and opened the door to find Cole's sister standing at my doorstep with a small smile on her face. Then she began to stutter and my mind couldn't register whatever she was talking to me because of the sleep.

A sexy voice made me abruptly come back to my senses. I looked toward the right to find Aderyn standing near the corner wearing short jeans and black tops. She looked hot and so sexy.

Damn.

"Why couldn't I smell her presence earlier?" I thought to myself and frowned at myself. Wasn't mates suppose to feel and smell each other presence very easily?

The question stayed at the back of my mind and I concentrated on what she was speaking. I found that both of them were going out for shopping. As much as I hate to admit, I dislike her going to shopping alone.

Sure Bell was with her and I knew that Bell like Cole was a brave and strong Warrior but still I couldn't take the risk with her. So I mind linked my two guards asking them to follow them but be in a safe distance away from them.

Like it or not, Aderyn was my responsibility and I will be damned if anything happened to her. So, I agreed and for the first time in my life, I did such a thing which was even shocking for me.

I don't know what got into me but I asked Aderyn to wait and went back into my room and fishing out my Credit Card from my pant pocket I handed it to her. It was just a kind gesture from my side but she took it in a wrong way telling more like screaming at me that at had money and she doesn't need mine but eventually she agreed and took the card.

When it was the time for them to leave, I began to close the door but again for the second time of the day I don't know what got into me but I couldn't stop myself.

I spanked her butt. Her sexy butt was spanked by me and I can't even express how I felt.

First of all, I was glad that I did that then when my brain registered what I did I couldn't believe it.

“You perverted wolf. What the fuck did you do that for?” I snapped at my wolf after closing the door on Aderyn face who was banging at it like a caveman.

“She is my mate. I have every right on her. You weren’t advancing so I did it. You have a problem with her but not me” he snapped back.

“Now How the hell am I going to make you understand this” I cursed and took a sigh of relief when the banging stopped.

I knew it wasn’t the end. She will surely hunt me down in my dreams. If anything I knew about Aderyn from these days was that she was really stubborn and Hot headed.

“She is my mate” my wolf screamed at me in my head.

“Go back to your cave you mutt” I snapped back.

“How dare you? I am no mutt. I am the King” he told me howling in my mind proudly to prove his point.

“So am I” I told him and blocked him out.

I kept on getting updated about them from my guards. I was confused when I knew Aderyn went into a store alone but didn’t buy anything much. I wondered what made her go there alone. She could’ve taken Bell with her but then it isn’t my business what she did and what she did not. Her safety was the only thing which I kept as my priority.

I never expected her to give my Card back to me so easily. I thought she would be glad that I let her my card but as always she was different. She returned back my card on the same day telling me that she didn’t use it.

I couldn’t help myself but to think how my life would’ve been if I wasn’t so broken. Maybe I would’ve accepted her as my mate from the beginning and would’ve cherished her with love and care.

Though not love, I still care for her. I know it will surely pain me when I will be finally rejecting her.

I am just waiting for the day when the Almighty, the Seniors, The Aged Wolves will be finally giving us the visit.

They are the Sacred Wolves known as the Aged Wolves. They are like power by themselves.They are no ordinary werewolves. They provide us power and they can even take back our powers. They are not alive. They are somewhat like sacred souls. They are second after Moon Goddess.They can never die. They are the immortals. It is told that they have been in this earth since the time of mythological Lycans. They will show up before you when according to them it is the right time.

They were the one who throne me as the King and they will be the one who will also Throne Aderyn as the Queen.

But I am really surprised that though I've found my mate, they still haven't given us a visit. I wonder what is making them wait.

I have decided that I will reject Aderyn as my mate the day the Aged Wolves showed up for the Queen announcement, I will just reject her and give them a good reason for doing so.

I just hope they will understand.

I was sitting in my office, my mind continuously drifting back to Aderyn. I just couldn't stop thinking about her. So, I decided to do something.

"Okay? You don't want a mate right?" I asked to myself.

"That's right. Yes I don't want a mate" I replied to my own question.

"But why?"

"Because a mate will make you weak especially a human mate".

"In which sense will she make you weak?"

"In every sense. First of all I am the King. I have a large amount of responsibilities on my shoulders. I have to take care of the kingdom as well as the werewolves. And I have enemies how the hell am I suppose to save them both if they will be in problem at the same time?"

"Look just because she is human she isn't weak".

"Yeah I know I have seen her stubborn side but still we are werewolves. We are to be judged by our strength. Strength is everything for us".

"That's not true".

"Yeah and moreover I don't want her to see my life. My life isn't Dandy and all. My past is something I can't never forget. Have you seen her? So full of life. Enjoying, smiling, laughing, living her life. Just because she is my mate that doesn't mean that I can drag her to my problems. If anything she will get, that's only hurt and sympathy for me. I want to keep her away from me. Away from my difficulties and problems".

I rubbed my forehead out of frustration. If anyone saw me talking to myself then they will surely think that I am mad.

"What should I do?" I muttered to myself.

"I think yo-" my wolf spoke to me.

“Now don’t you dare butt in. You are making it more complicated” I told him but as the stubborn wolf he is, he ignored my comment and continued. .

“See you don’t want a weak mate correct?”

I rolled my eyes and agreed.

“So why don’t you make her strong?” He told me and I gave him my full attention now.

“Make her strong?” I questioned.

“See you are worrying right that you won’t be present every time to save her from our enemies?”

I nodded and waited for him to continue.

“Then why don’t you reach her at least how to protect herself. In simple words how to fight” he told me and I l of liked the Idea.

“You can at least train her so that she could sad herself. Sure, she is a human she doesn’t have that much strength as we and out enemies do but at least she could use her brain at the time of a problem right?” He wiggled his tail waiting for my answer.

“Right” I told him satisfied by his Idea and he howled in my head and jumped enthusiastically.

I arranged everything. I ordered Train a trainer of our warrior wolves to teach Aderyn. I believed upon him and I knew he could easily deal with her.

The only problem left was Aderyn.

I have to make her understand Why in earth she needs to learn fighting. I am really confused. I cursed my fate for giving me a human mate. It would’ve been so easy if she were a werewolf.

I wouldn’t have to make her understand so much. She would’ve been easily understood and I would’ve been rejected her without any problem.

“Why did you did this with me Moon Goddess?” I sighed as I leaned against my chair and mind linked Bell asking her to bring Aderyn to my office.

I needed to handle this. The more earlier it is sort out, the more easier it will become for me to reject her.

It is for her own betterment.

As I waited for her, I began to think ideas in my brain which I would be portraying before her for all this training.

*****

Chapter 16

Lying down on my bed I shivered feeling cold. I got up from my bed and switched off the A.C. I went back to the bed and jumped on it. The bed making a squeaking sound due to my weight.

I flipped on my belly and closed my eyes. I don't know for how many minutes I closed my eyes, but soon I found myself in deep sleep.

Suddenly I found myself somewhere.

Woods?

What am I doing here?

I looked around to my surrounding and found many trees, shrubs, grasses. Furrowing my eyebrows I thought to walk into the woods. So, I walked into the woods. Everything seemed so blurry. I looked back and saw the place where I walked few minutes ago beginning to turn into water.

"What the?" I muttered not believing my eyes.

I turned around and started to run. I began to run, run and run. My legs began to hurt from running, still I didn't stop. I ran with all my force.

I could hear water in form of waves coming after me. So unreal.

Not paying attention to it, I kept on running wanting to get away. I began to slow down at some extent when I heard a voice. I was panting badly. Sweats were forming on my forehead and I heaved a sigh.

Taking a deep breathe, I looked back and found that there was no longer water or waves but only woods. I exhaled a breathe keeping a hand on my chest to calm my heart.

"Adieee" I heard a familiar voice calling me. Very familiar. My heart beat rose and my eyes widened hearing the voice.

"N-Nancy?" I spoke slowly not able to believe it.

I looked around. My eyes searching for the source of the voice. I looked everywhere and began to run everywhere in the woods.

"Adie" she called again and this time giggling.

"Nancy?" I called tears flowing down my cheeks.

“Nancy is that you? Where are you?” I shouted hoping for her to reply. When nobody replied I began to run here and there searching everywhere.

“Adie” a voice called from behind me.

I stopped in my tracks and slowly turned around. My eyes widened seeing her. She wore her pink frock and Ballerinas. Her favorite bow band in her hair. She stood few steps away from me smiling at me.

“Adie” she beamed running towards me.

I smiled as the tears continuously fell down my cheeks and I ran to her and cradled her into my arms hugging her with all my love.

“Nancy” I whispered near her ear.

“Adie where were you? I missed you” she told me with her cute childlike voice.

“I miss you too love. I miss you too” I cried hugging her more tight.

She let me go and I loosened my hold on her for a little bit to see her face.

“You look different” she murmured.

I chuckled a little and kissed her palms.

“That’s because I’m 22 now. I am no longer 18” I told her and noticed as her face turned into a sad one.

“But I am still five” she murmured and began to walk back.

“Nancy where are you going? Wait!” I tried to touch her but my eyes widened when my fingers couldn’t touch her.

“I am still five” she whispered as she backed away.

“Nancy please” I called her crying a little.

“I am still five Adie” she whispered with sad eyes and turned on her back and began to run.

“Nancy” I cried calling her and ran after her.

She ran deep into the woods and didn’t even look back. I ran after her but it was being impossible for me to follow her. The scenery before me began to fade as I began to feel suffocated. I lost her from sight and I began to cry calling her name.

“What is going on?” I cried racking a hand into my hair.

Suddenly I heard another voice and my eyes widened hearing those voices.

“Aderyn” they called.

“Princess?” they called again when I didn’t turn around. My heart beat rose again hearing their voice after along time.

I slowly turned around and gasped seeing them after a long time.

“Aderyn sweetheart” my mom called me smiling at me.

“My princess” Dad smiled keeping his hand around my mom’s waist.

I couldn’t believe my own eyes. They were looking so happy. They were smiling at me. My mom was wearing her Floral Sundress and a white shrug above it. My Dad was wearing his black Jeans with his Brown Shirt.

“Princess you are looking so beautiful” my Dad spoke his eyes getting watery.

“D-Dad? M-Mo- Mom?” I couldn’t believe my eyes. Tears began to blind me and wiped them away with the back of hand quickly.

“Honey she is so grown up now. She looks like you” my mom spoke as tears fell down her cheeks as well.

“Yes. She is my princess” My Dad spoke placing a kiss on her head.

“I miss you princess” my Dad spoke smiling at me.

“We miss you darling” my mom spoke and I heard a giggle.

Nancy came running towards them from the woods. My Dad cradled her into his arms and mom smiled kissing her cheek.

“Mommy look she looks different now. But why?” Nancy whined looking at me.

“Because Darling she is grown up now. She is a grown up lady now” my mom spoke dreamily smiling at me.

“Mom, Dad, Nancy” I cried as I took a step towards them.

“No matter how grown up you are, you will still remain our baby girl Aderyn and we want you to remember that” my mom spoke and tears again started to blind me.

“Yes and remember what I taught you princess? Be strong. You are my daughter. Promise me you will remain strong and fight for your right” my Dad spoke waiting for me to reply.

“I p-promise” I replied while crying.

“We are so proud of you darling” my mom spoke as she hugged Dad and Nancy.

“I love you” I whispered and took another step towards them.

“We love you too” they said in chorus.

I laughed a little wiping my tears. I took another step towards them but stopped when I heard another voice speak “Aderyn”.

I could feel my heart beating wildly against my rib cage hearing that voice. I watched as three of them looked towards my left, their expression changed.

Slowly turning towards my left I found the person to be my elder brother Ryan.

“R-Ryan?” I whispered.

“Aderyn” he spoke and took a step towards me.

“Remember you promise baby girl” I heard my father speak to me. I turned towards them to see them fading away.

“No! Wait! Dad..Mom..Nancy. Please don’t go wait!” I cried running towards them.

“Always remember your promise Princess” Dad spoke as he hugged mom and Nancy tightly fading away with them.

“Dad.. mom” I cried running towards them.

“You will always remain our princess” my mom spoke as tears fell down from her cheeks and she smiled at me sadly.

I couldn’t teach them in time as they completely faded away into thin air leaving me alone and cold. But their voice echoed from the woods as together they spoke “Always”.

“Please come back” I cried as I fell down on my knees crying and sobbing as loud as I could.

I looked back and found no one. Ryan wasn’t their any longer which made me cry more. I fell on my side on the grass crying more. I hugged my knees and sobbed loudly unable to control myself.

“Please come back” I whispered with hoarse voice.

I was crying very hard when I heard a twig snapped. Immediately I sat on the grass and wiped away my tears using my hand.

“Dad?” I called with hope in my voice.

“Mom?” I called again when no one replied.

“Nancy is that you?” I called hoping someone to answer me.

I waited and finally I heard someone growling. For the umpteenth time of the day, my heart beat rose but not in fear. From the woods, emerged a shadow which formed a figure of a wolf walking gracefully and slowly towards me.

A complete black wolf and bigger the size of a normal wolf. The wolf has a white tattoo diamond like structure on its forehead and it’s eyes wear forest green. I found the eyes look very familiar and I began to crawl backwards feeling little scared.

As if sensing my fear, the wolf stopped growling and stood dead on its track.

“Go away” I muttered which led the wolf to growl.

I crawled back more and found the wolf slowly advancing me.

It took slow steps and finally reached me. I was shivering now with fear seeing the large wolf. I closed my eyes thinking that it possibly will bite me now but when it didn’t do anything I opened my slowly only to look directly into its eyes.

It was standing only an inch away from my face and staring deeply into my eyes. I felt calm only by staring into its eyes.

Slowly, I tried to touch it’s face but it stepped back away from my hold.

“Wait!” I whispered my voice hoarse.

Tears began to slide down my cheeks and the wolf began to howl seeing me cry. It was like as if it felt pain for me. It didn’t like seeing me cry.

Sensing it, I wiped my tears with the back of my hand. The wolf stopped howling and again walked towards me. It came near me and fell on the ground before me.

I tried to touch it but stopped when it kept it’s head in my lap. I touched its head and slowly began to care its hair.

It was so soft. I trailed my finger on the tattoo on its forehead. The wolf closed its eye and wiggled its tail a little when I did so.

I smiled a little and using both of my hands, I patted its neck and back.

I was so lost with it that I completely forgot about my family. The pain was long gone and the only thing which brought me peace was the large wolf who was laying before me with it’s head on my lap.

I closed my eyes completely finding myself in bliss.

When I opened my eyes, I blinked it few times letting it adjust with the light. I groaned a little and found myself in my bed.

Sitting on my bed I checked the time and wiped the sleep away from my eyes.

“A dream?” I whispered to myself when I recognized that I just saw a dream.

“A Wolf?” I asked myself remembering some parts of my dream.

A small smile appeared on my lips as I touched my family frame.

“I miss you all” I whispered feeling little happy for uncertain reasons.

******

Chapter 17

I walked for some hours with Dylan in the evening and returned back to be house as usually not uttering a single word with him.

Pursing my lips, I thought to as something. My stomach growled hungrily and I took long strides towards the kitchen hoping to eat something.

As I came near the kitchen, I heard some sounds from somewhere. Furrowing my eyebrows, I followed the sounds and reached the backside of the house.

I was just about to open the door but was stopped when someone called me "L-Luna?"

I turned around to find a woman in her late thirty's looking at me with fear in her eyes.

"Is everything alright?" I asked slowly watching her weird expression.

"Luna what are you doing here? You are not supposed to be here" she told me and walked towards me.

"Yeah? Why? I just heard some voice an-" she cut me off "Please Luna I am sorry for interrupting you but I think you should go back to your room. Alpha will be very angry of he knows that you were here".

"Yeah okay? But I was hungry and I was going to the kitchen" I told her feeling my stomach growl.

"Oh my! I am so sorry. Please go to the kitchen there you will find Nina she will serve you whatever you want to eat" she told me restlessly as her eyes continued looking towards the door where I could still hear the sounds.

Seeing her sweats I got quiet suspicious but I shrugged off the matter and nodded walking towards th kitchen.

As soon as I left I heard the door which led to the backside close Shut with a loud bang.

"Jeez! What's wrong with her and I didn't even correct her when she was calling me Luna. I have to talk about this with Dylan" I huffed out air and continued walking towards kitchen.

"Hello Luna what do you want to eat?" asked the lady with raven hair in the Kitchen room.

"Uh how do you know that I am here to eat something?" I questioned her crossing my arms across my chest.

"Uh Beckky told me that you are hungry" she stammered.

“But how did she tell you? I just met few seconds back and I don’t remember her calling you on the phone” I questioned like a cop.

“Uh yes she actually called me few seconds ago” she stammered and placed the utensils on the stove.

I nodded and went towards the refrigerator. I could still hear the voices. Voices of someone screaming now.

I wonder what was going on.

This place is really weird.

“What’s going on in there?” I asked Nina pointing towards the window of the backside.

The color drained from her face and she began to stammer “No- Nothing”.

She prepared me some grilled chicken with white sauce. I ate it feeling contended and satisfied savoring the delicious chicken and finally when I was done I washed the dishes much to Nina’s annoyance and walked back towards my room.

I heard a very loud sound of someone screaming in pain. It was still coming from the backside of the house. “Curiosity killed the cat” was the phrase which my brain keeps on repeating to me.

Out of curiousness, finally I decided to find out what the hell was going on there.

I looked around checking for anyone and when I found none, taking a deep breath I walked towards the back door.

The more I got closer the more clear and loud was the voice. It has been may be forty minutes since that sound has been coming and I am surprised that no one is bothering about it.

Slowly, I took menacing steps and when I got near the door, I looked around again for anyone. When I found no one, I slowly turned the door knob and opened it slightly so that I could take a peek of what was going on there.

I peeked through the slight opening of the door and looked around for the source but when I found what it was the ground slipped under my foot.

Their in the field lied a teenage boy aching, screaming in pain. The most horrible part was not his screaming but the way his body twisted which was unlike human. It was very disturbing. I could see his eyes changing colors from this distance as it glowed and reflected the light as that of an animal.

I could see paws coming out or forming in the place of his hand and hair growing on his face and skin.

“What the hell?” I whispered out of shock.

Was I dreaming?

I pinched myself and winced when I found myself in reality.

This was totally inhuman.

How the f*ck was that teenage boy transforming?

The sounds were of bone cracking. It looked as if his bone was breaking and re-shaping into something new. The boy screamed, thrashed around in pain and I could see tears running down his cheeks.

He was like shape shifting. All the stories that my mom told me when I was a kid came flooding into my mind.

I felt myself numb. It was like I couldn’t move. I was in a state of coma. Where I could see and hear everything. No words formed in my lips.

Supernatural beings were supposed to live in stories not in real life. Right?

My thought got interrupted when I heard a loud bone cracking ear piercing sound from the boy and finally, the boy was no longer human. I took the shape of that of what looked like a wolf and it stood on its four legs panting and huffing loudly.

I could hear cheers and people laughing and I averted my gaze towards the left to find a group of people cheering and laughing seeing the bo- now transformed wolf.

What the actual f*ck?

Don’t they find this disturbing and weird?

A boy, a freaking human just got transformed into a wolf before their own eyes. What is wrong with them?

The wolf wiggled his tail and I watched a girl going towards it and touching its head completely not fearing it.

As I was just going to utter a word the girl took few step backwards and jumped up into the air and out of nowhere transformed into a wolf raising my already speedy heart beat.

What in world was going on?

Nobody seemed to mind the wolfs and the wolfs nuzzled their noses against themselves and ran into the woods in a playful manner.

I took a step back and I was sure I would pass out any second. This is the first time in my life when I'm finding myself so weak and miserable.

How the f*ck did not I find this earlier? This all people living in here are same. They all are meat eating animals or maybe human-eater.

I was sure that I was a human. Was it possible that I was kidnapped by them for their eating purpose? Oh f*ck No.

What am I going to do now?

I didn't realize that I was walking backwards when I felt myself colliding against a hard wall.

Startled, I turned around to meet with a chest of a person and not only a person but Dylan himself.

"What are you doing here?" He asked slowly watching my shocked and weird expression.

This is seriously the first time in my life when I am having such kind of expression. Normally, I would have masked it but it was just too much for me to take in.

I heard a loud howl from the backside probably by the same wolf and I looked back at Dylan whose eyes were wide probably realizing the fact that I just found out about their little secret.

That explains, Dylan knows everything and that means Dylan was also one of them. Supernatural beings. Oh no.

What have I got myself into?

*****

Chapter 18

“Let me go” I cried thrashing around.

“What will we eat if we let you go hu?” Dylan said smiling evilly.

“We are really hungry Adieee” Bell chirped showing me a fork.

“Bell I thought we were friends” I cried trying to set myself free.

“Humans can never be our friends. We can’t do friendship with our food. What will we eat to survive then?” Bell began to sharpen the knife she was holding.

“Let me go” I tried to crawl away from the top of the table where I was tied.

“No can do Adie” Blake laughed coming near me.

“It will just take a minute Adie” Cole smirked evilly.

Dylan, Bell, Come and Blake began to surround me and they began to taunt me showing me the knives in their hand. They were going to eat me.

I shouted and screamed until my throat was itching, “No don’t eat me no don’t eat me. I don’t have any meat” I screamed thrashing around.

I found myself shaking and when I came back to my senses I looked around frantically to find myself in my room, sitting on my bed, holding a pillow tightly while Dylan was standing beside the bed, Cole and Blake near the window and Bell was sitting before me.

All their eyes were on me looking at me as if I have two heads attached to my body. I eyed them cautiously and took a deep breath calming myself down. I was just daydreaming.

“Idiot!” my inner self mocked me.

Bell cleared her throat and I watched as her expression changed to a worried one. She reached her hands and touched my arms reassuring me that everything was alright.

“Are you okay?” She whispered with worried eyes.

“Yeah! Yeah I am okay” I found myself replying nodding my head like a robot.

She gave me a small smile and touched my cheek patting it lightly.

“Don’t worry. Calm down a bit” she told me to which I only nodded.

“It wasn’t how I expected you to find out” I heard Dylan muttering and he rubbed his face with his palms cleanly frustrated.

“Aderyn” Bell began and I gave her my full attention.

“You need to something about us” she spoke and my inner voice stated irritated “No sh*t Sherlock”.

I kept my mouth shut though I wanted to say those sarcastic words.

“I know you already have find it out by yourself but whatever you saw there is the half truth. You need to know the full one. I know you must freaking out inside which you are clearly not showing but Adie “she reached for my hand “we will never harm you”.

I didn’t Knew what to say so I just kept my mouth shut and nodded my head like Noddy.

She sighed and turned to look at Dylan. Dylan shoved his hands into his pant pocket and pursing his lips he nodded towards Bell.

I looked towards Cole and Blake to find them already staring at me. They gave me a small smile to which I returned assuring them that I was alright.

Bell turned towards me and taking a deep breath she spoke in one breath “We are Werewolves”.

“I am elephant” I couldn’t stop my mouth saying those sarcastic sentence.

She gave me a look and I heard Dylan scoffing at me while Blake and Cole burst out laughing.

“Aderyn can never change” Blake spoke and Cole nodded coughing a little.

“Aderyn this is serious” Bell turned my head towards her using her finger.

“Okay Fine” I held the pillow to my chest and gestured for her to continue.

“Aderyn we are shape shifters, supernatural beings which is we are Werewolves” she told me and I quietly listened to her.

“We have been on earth from thousands of years, before human and we have been living as a mythological creatures away from mankind”.

“We keep ourselves hidden from you humans but trust we are no harm to you. We respect your kind and that is why we are staying away from you human living peacefully. Trust me Aderyn we are no harm to you” she told me truthfully and I nodded agreeing with her.

Sure they were no harm to us. Otherwise we would’ve been in deep Shit.

“So why am I here? I mean why was I kidnapped and brought here? Did I do something to violate your community?” I asked confused trying to remember if I did anything unintentionally.

“No Aderyn you did not do anything. We brought you here because we need you” she spoke.

“Ne-Need me?” I questioned to which my inner self replied “for your meat”.

I shut her up and payed attention to Bell.

“Adie for that you need to know everything about us first okay?” She asked and I nodded positively.

“See we have our God, who created us as you human has your God and lords that you pray we have our creator and she is The Moon Goddess”.

My mouth formed into a O shape as I found myself interested to learn more about them.

“The Moon Goddess created us. She is our Creator”.

“After her is The Aged Wolves. They are the Seniors of our kind. They have been living in this ground for millions of years. They are wolves, powerful than us. They give us powers and they have the capability to take our powers back too. They can never die. They are immortals, they are like souls wandering everywhere”.

“After them is the King. The most powerful among the werewolves. The Alpha of every Alphas. His word is our command. He rules the werewolf kind. He saves us from threats and our enemies”.

“Then comes the Queen. She is the mate of the King. She takes care of the kingdom. She is as powerful as the King. She is like a mother to every werewolf. She is the Luna of Lunas”.

She told me and the word “Luna” disturbed me but I chose to keep my mouth shut. I will ask her about that later.

“Then comes Beta who is the right hand of Alpha. The warriors who fights and protects the territory”.

“We werewolves have different packs. There are many packs in this world. Each pack have their own Alpha, Luna, Beta and different ranks”.

“But they all are below us”.

“Below you?” I questioned.

“Yes below us because The King himself is Dylan”.

She told smiling at me and I looked at Dylan shocked. He was a freaking King?

“Yes I am the ” he said air quoting the words “freaking King”.

I scoffed at him and eyes him up and down.

“Who made you the King?” and crossed my arms across the pillow. He scowled at me and muttered something under his breath. Bell tried to hide her smile but was failing miserably. At last she coughed a little and became serious speaking “Moon Goddess made him the King”.

I gave her a small smile and narrowed my eyes at Dylan who was looking the other way his expression neutral.

“Blake is the Beta of Betas” she told me and I looked towards him giving him a genuine smile. I don’t know why but I feel proud and glad that he held that position. He smiled back at me proudly and held his head high showing me how proud he was.

“Cole is the warrior, the Delta of Deltas” I looked towards Cole to find him giving me a nervous glance. I smiled at him to which his nervousness seemed to fade away and he smiled back at me.

“We also have Omegas, who are the lowest rank of werewolf kind”.

“What about the Queen?” I questioned interested to know.

I wanted to know whose luck was that bad to be the Queen of Dylan. She must be really irritated by him. I feel bad for her though.

Bell pursed her lips and looked back at Dylan for any kind of signal. Dylan rolled his eyes and looked other way.

“The Queen is yet to be found Adie. But we know she is around us, with us, safe with us” she told me and I nodded.

“How will you know that she is your Queen?” I asked the question was disturbing me from the beginning.

“We can feel her. We can feel her power and we sense her as our Queen. Werewolves have mates Aderyn. The Moon Goddess sends us as our soulmates, the other half. We were meant to be together. We can feel and smell them when they are around us. Our mates will have their own smell which only we, their mate can smell it. It will feel as if the world will stop around you when you look into your mate eyes. He/she will be your everything who will take care of you, cherish you with love, protect you and everything. When you will touch your mate, you feel sparks and tingles forming in that place where he will touch you”.

At her last sentence my breath hitched and I could feel my heart beat rising. Her sentence disturbed me. I took a glance towards Dylan to find him already looking at me with something in his eyes.

I averted my gaze not wanting to think about it and concentrated upon Bell.

“So that’s how we will know that she is our Queen” Bell completed.

“But what am I doing here?” I asked still confused.

“Who will know about it soon Aderyn but till then have faith on us and have patience” she told me with hope in her eyes.

“Do you have a mate?” I asked and watched as her cheeks tinted pink as immediately she heard my question. She took a loose strand of her hair and twirled it with her fingers blushing and shaking her head “No”.

“Only Cole has found his mate” she told me and I looked at Cole who was already smiling dreamily possibly thinking about his mate.

“Who is she?” I asked

“She is the daughter of an Alpha from a pack. She has gone to them for few days. She will be back soon and you will meet her soon”.

I nodded “What will happen after you find your mate?” I asked.

Blake began to cough and he went out of the room giving an excuse.

“You will mate with he-” she was cut off by Dylan.

“That’s enough. I think that is enough for today. She will know about all this eventually not at a time” Dylan justified to his interruption.

Bell bit down on her tongue and looked at me giving me a sheepish grin.

“I think Alpha will tell yo-” she was again interrupted by Dylan who spoke warning “Bella”.

She stopped mid sentence and I frowned at Dylan for interrupting so much.

“What is your problem? Can’t you just keep quiet?” I snapped at him to which he just gave me a sarcastic smile crossing his hands across his chest.

“Bell let’s give her some space. She should probably take rest. It is all very new to her. Tell her about us tomorrow. It’s very late. Let her sleep” Dylan spoke more like Commanded and gave me glance before turning around and walking out of the room.

Bell sighed and looked at me “I think he is right. You should sleep now”.

“She will tell you everything tomorrow”Cole spoke walking towards us and keeping a hand on Bell.

Bell nodded and got up from the bed and made me sleep on my bed. I still couldn’t believe everything and I held the pillow more tightly to my chest.

Bell placed a small kiss on my forehead and covered me with the duvet. I gave her a small smile.

Both of them walked towards the door and Bell switched off the light.

“Wait!” I found myself talking.

“Yeah?” Bell asked from the doorway.

“You are not human eaters right?” I asked foolishly and she looked at Cole who shook his head, sighing.

“No we are not” she told me and I laughed incredulously feeling foolish “Haha stupid me” I muttered.

“Good Night Aderyn” Cole spoke smiling.

“Good Night Adie” Bell wished and I replied with a mere whisper when I found myself already feeling sleepy. As soon as my head hit the pillow I slept soundly still thinking all this as a dream.

******

Chapter 19

Aderyn Pov

“You sure I should be going there?” I asked for the umpteenth time to Cole.

It’s been two days since I came to know about all these supernatural beings and werewolves. Yesterday, my whole day was spent with Bell as she feed me about all the little information about werewolves. I also came to know that Vampires and other creatures are also existing in this earth but they are living peacefully in their community.

I came to know all about mate bonding, mate, in which age they shape shifts, heat, Omegas and even about mating and marking. I felt it really odd about that marking part. It is like to show your head to crocodile taunting it “Do you want to eat my head? Eat it C’mon Eat it yo yo you hit it”.

Wow that just formed a lyric for a song.

“Seriously?” my inner self mocked me.

Currently, Cole wants me witness how werewolves train. I don’t want to be a intruder though.

“Yes I am Sure Adie. Alpha himself told me to bring you” he replied and I don’t know why but I felt myself shivering when I heard the word Alpha. It’s been a day since I saw him. As I was just with Bell taking in the information about werewolves, I skipped the walk with him intentionally.

I was just not ready for it. It’s just too much to take in that the man with whom I fought so much, got irritated was a werewolf and not only an ordinary werewolf but a King.

How am I supposed to Cope up with that?

But the thought that he wants me to witness their training brought a contagious smile onto my face. It means that I was in his mind these days. He didn’t stop thinking about me.

“Of course how can he now that you know about their little secret you dumb ass” my subconscious told me.

I scoffed at her but nevertheless followed Cole wherever he was taking me.

“I seriously don’t want to intrude” I told him and watched as he sighed shaking his head at me “You think too much Aderyn!” He replied.

I kept my mouth shut after that and found myself going into the woods. A walked through the pebble stones and large trees and finally we reached an open space. It looked like a big field.

We were not alone their. There were many men and women. Some were aged while some where young. They were warming up. I looked around and found Dylan his back facing me, talking to none other than Lily.

I sighed and marked her cheek which had a cut few days back but now it didn't have a single line of scratch on it. Bell did told me about their healing power but I didn't know that it would heal that faster.

As if sensing my gaze or maybe presence of foreign smell Dylan turned around. His eyes directly falling on me. He was wearing a black Vest, his muscular biceps and muscles in his hands were in display. I could see the veins which were popping out of his skin probably because of work out. He was wearing a black Trouser and shoe. His hair was messy but nevertheless he looked fresh.

His gaze was fixed upon me. I watched as Lily tried to grab his attention calling him and even shaking his hand. When he didn't reply, she looked towards the source where he was looking and found me. Her glare and hatred didn't go unnoticed by me. She rolled her eyes and turned on her back taking a water bottle from the table, and she walked away.

I looked back at Dylan to find him already walking towards me. I composed myself and held my expression neutral. I came to know about Dylan having extraordinary elemental powers. I also came to know that he could hear our thoughts or read our mind. He can even look into our mind going through our past, which disturbed me. If it was true then he must have found everything about me.

If he hasn't then I have to be carefully in what I think. I don't want him to read me every time. It's just so unfair, it's like intruding into someone's privacy.

"I see you decided to show up Miss Brookes" he spoke sarcastically.

I rolled my eyes at his formalities.

"I didn't decide anything. Cole practically dragged me here" I told him shoving my hands into my Pant pockets.

"Adie!" I heard my name being called and I looked around to see Train and Bell walking towards me.

"Train! Bell" I spoke.

"You are here for the training?" Train asked me.

"Nope just to watch" I told him and glared at Dylan who coughed, his cough was like as if he was taunting me and true to as I thought he muttered "she can only watch".

I turned around and walked back from where I just came.

“Adie wait!” I heard Train, Bell and Cole calling me but I didn’t stop. Dylan is just too much.

“What does he thinks of himself?”

“Aderyn Stay” I heard a thunder like voice from Dylan.

I stopped in my tracks and turned around to see everyone stopped in their track watching us fearfully.

I didn’t stop because of fear but of anger. How dare he command me?

I walked back to him and crossed my arms across my chest.

“Do you see any extra ears coming out of my head?” I asked him while he stared at me in neutral face.

“Do you see any claws or paws?” I asked showing him my hands.

“Do you see any tail attached here?” I asked pointing towards my ass and this time he shooked his head No slowly with a frown in his face.

“Then why the hell did you just command me like I am some dog?” I snapped glaring at him.

He composed himself and took hold of my arms dragging me with him to the other part of the field.

“Everyone start your training” his voice boomed as everyone nodded and in no second lunged at each other in their human form changing into their wolf forms.

I watched silently as they fought with each other gracefully and fiercely.

Dylan was still holding my arm and we stood their silently watching as the wolf trained.

Though it was very disturbing that his touch on my bare skin was sending sparks and tingles down my spine and my mind kept on diverting towards the fact Mates but I ignored it completely and tried to wiggle my arm out of his grip.

He looked down at me, his height as usually intimidating me.

“Aderyn!” He spoke warning me when i didn’t stop wiggling.

The way he said my name stopped me and I looked up at him with a stoic face. He looked down at me and as our eyes met, the sounds of growling, panting faded away and I found myself in a different world where he and I were all alone.

He loosened his grip from my arm and as I was about to take my arm away, he stopped me as he slid down his palm onto my skin to my wrist. His touch emitting sparks and tingles. He held my

wrist firmly but not painfully and finally he slid his palm more down intertwining his fingers with mine.

“Now just watch the Training. Aderyn” he said slowly and the way he was looking at me I shuddered and shivered but in a good way.

I did not try to pull away this time. I let him hold my hand and he finally broke the gaze watching the Training.

“You will not join them?” I asked out of the blue.

“They are no match for me” as usual so full of himself I thought hearing his answer and rolled my eyes.

“Why are you always like this?” I asked watching the wolves fighting.

“How am I exactly always?” He asked and a small smile formed on my lips hearing his question.

“Mean, rude, arrogant and ” I stopped mid sentence.

“And?” He asked

“Pervert” I completed while he scoffed at me. I chuckled a little watching his reaction.

“Pervert? Oh really what did I do to have such a word coming out of your mouth?” He asked giving me all his attention.

“So now do I have you to remind you what you did last time?” I said recalling about that spank. I squeezed his hand trying to make him remember.

He coughed a little but kept his mouth shut.

“Cat got your tongue?” I asked but corrected myself “Oh sorry! Wolf got your tongue?”

I saw his lips twitching up into a smile and my God he looked so beautiful. He should smile more often.

I found myself following his smile and soon I was smiling too. It had been a long time since I smiled genuinely. I liked this feeling. I loved how I smiled without any fakeness and freely.

I felt myself in bliss.

Dylan was unknowingly giving me a reason to feel myself free and happy. But it did two things to me.

Happy as well as disturbing.

Chapter 20

“Mind link. Wow that’s really cool. I mean you don’t need to use a phone for connecting with someone. And now it explains how you guys were talking or having information about each other without even using a phone” I told Bell as she feed me about mind linking.

“Yeah it is cool” Cole replied and I marked as he looked restless.

“Cole?” I called him.

“Yeah?” He replied still looking restless.

“Is everything alright?”

“Yeah! Uh why?” He asked

“It’s because you seem restless. What is it Cole?” I asked leaning against the kitchen table as Bell prepared breakfast for us.

“Uh nothing” he replied rubbing his neck.

“I will tell you what’s his problem is. Jenny is his problem” Blake spoke as he entered the kitchen room.

“Jenny?” I questioned.

“Jenny as in Jennifer, his mate” Blake told me and I looked at Bell who was smiling towards Cole.

“Yes she is coming today” Bell added

“Really?” I asked excited. I wanted to meet Cole’s mate and I don’t know why but suddenly I feel very excited knowing that Jenny is going to come today.

“Wow that’s excellent. So you are restless thinking about her?” I questioned wiggling my eyebrows at him to which he laughed and nodded.

After Bell prepared our Breakfast we ate it in silence. Dylan was absent today for Breakfast and without me asking Bell told me that he is going to be out for some days as he was going for some pack meeting to other country.

I shrugged my shoulder in response hearing that. But deep down I felt little sad that he didn’t think to meet me before going. But I shrugged off the matter and continued eating my breakfast.

The day went usual with training with Train which we did training only on basics. He tried a lot to provoke me and show my skills to him but my stubbornness made him eventually to give up.

I ate lunch with everyone, met new people and even went to the meet Evangeline and the other kids, I went for a walk alone missing Dylan a little bit. Very little.

“Yeah! Yeah keep telling that to yourself” a voice inside me mocked me.

I went inside the house and out of nowhere I marked a figure getting bigger. It grew bigger, and I figured it as a lady’s figure. Soon I found my lungs choking for air.

“AAAAAH I can’t believe I am finally meeting you” the figure screamed excited near my ear, hugging me tightly knocking the air out of my lungs.

“Jenny let her go. You are choking her baby” I recognized the voice of Cole and mentally thanked God for sending him for my help.

“Oh my I’m so sorry” the figure finally let me go and I coughed a little inhaling a deep breath.

“I-It’s okay” I said feeling little relaxed.

I looked up to find a girl with Black hair and maybe two inches taller than me. She was slim and her skin was fair. Her black eyes matches her hair and the dimples in her cheek made me want to poke it. She was a beautiful woman maybe older than me.

“Hi I am Jenny.. uh Jennifer Dave” she told me giving me her hand for shake.

“Hi I am Aderyn Brookes and you can call me Adie” I told her shaking her hand with mine.

She seemed very excited and a Bubbly kind of girl. Her eyes twinkled whenever she smiled and I was sure Cole loved her with his life seeing as he encircled his arms across her waist and kissed her cheek lightly smiling down at her enthusiasm.

“I am so excited to finally able to meet you Lu-” she was stopped mid sentence by Cole as he interfered saying “Uh baby Adie here just came from a long walk and I think she may be tired now and you also came from a long distance, you must be also tired so why don’t you let her have some rest while you do the same?”

“Oh but I wanted to talk to her” she whined to which Cole added “Baby I understand that you are excited but she is tired” I was about to say no when Jenny nodded and I shut my mouth.

“Okay I will meet you tomorrow. We will have lots of fun tomorrow. I am so excited already” Jenny took hold of my hands and said in one breath. I couldn’t help but smile at her innocence.

I nodded and watched as Cole literally dragged her away from me before she could hug me. She waved at me like a child and I couldn’t help but to wave back feeling little awkward.

When she was out of my sight I sighed smiling a little. She is really a lovely person. No doubt, Cole loves her so much.

I walked back to my room and changed into a comfortable night suit. I fell backwards on my bed and eyed the ceiling blankly.

“What must be Dylan be doing now?” I found myself asking.

I smacked my forehead “What the hell Aderyn? Why are you thinking about that Stupid so much?” I said to myself.

I flipped on my belly and swinged my legs in the air, resting my head on my palms I sighed loudly. I closed my eyes but opened it when I found my phone ringing loudly somewhere in the room.

I frowned and got up from the bed.

“Who is calling me in this time ?” I questioned to myself.

I usually do not give my personal number to anyone and I have already got the message about the next month so, they might not be calling me so, who was it?

I searched my phone here and there not finding it. The ring was coming out in a muffled voice. If it wasn’t the silence of the room, I would never had heard it ringing.

Finally, I got it in my pant pocket which was kept inside the drawer. I frowned seeing an unknown number.

By now I was panting hard for searching the phone and running everywhere. I picked up the phone and answered the call still panting hard “H-Hello?” I asked to the person in the other line.

“Miss Brookes” I heard the person saying and in no time I recognized the owner of the voice. My heart hammered against my body and I felt a new energy building inside my body hearing his voice.

“Y-Yeah?” I said trying to calm down a bit.

“Aderyn what were you doing?” I heard him speaking and I could point hint of restlessness and and an Emotion like jealousy from his voice.

“I was running searching for my phone” I told him and heard as he took a deep breath.

He didn’t answer me and for some minutes he just kept quiet. I thought that maybe he hanged up on me but when I found the timing of call still working in my phone I knew that he was still on line.

I heard a knock on my door and still holding the phone in my hand I opened the door to find a guy standing there. I raised an eyebrow at him and he bowed his head at me which I found really awkward.

Without saying anything he looked inside my room still standing in my doorstep and sniffed the air like a dog. He bowed again and went away.

I closed ny door furrowing my eyebrows and then it clicked me he was sent by Dylan.

“What the hell? You sent him to check on me?” I shouted on the phone.

“Liste-” he began but I cut him off “now you are spying on me? Did you thought I was with someone in my room?” I asked irritated and I heard a low growl from him.

“Shut up now Aderyn. I sent him because I wanted to make sure you were alright okay so stop making this an issue” he snapped at me and I shut my mouth listening to him.

“I was just worrying about you as I am not there and yo-” he cut himself off realizing what he just said.

My eyes widened and my heart beat rose hearing him. I felt my cheeks burn and I knew I was blushing. When was the last time I blushed?

“Fuck” I heard him mutter and a small smile found its way to my lips.

“Well you don’t need to worry. I am perfectly fine and I can take care of myself” I told him and waited for his reply but he didn’t reply anything. I change the topic “Now tell me where did you find my number?”

“I have my own ways Miss Brookes” he told me and I rolled my eyes at his formalities.

“Whatever” I told him and I was sure I heard a soft chuckle from him.

“I am not going to be back before three days” he told me and somehow I felt myself missing him and it disturbed me.

“Good stay there. You don’t need to come back. It’s so peaceful without you here” I spoke and I knew I was lying and somehow I knew that he also knew I was lying.

“Peaceful?” He scoffed and the smile that I had previously grew wide on my lips. I had to bit down on my lips to stop myself from chuckling or laughing.

“So why did you call?” I asked and waited for him to reply.

“Uh I uh Jennifer is back right?” He asked and I knew he didn’t call me for that.

“Yes and I met her. She is a sweet person” I told him.

“Listen Aderyn” he began and I layer my full attention to him.

“Don’t go out for walking all alone till I come back” he told me and I was ready to give him a piece of my mind but stopped when he continued.

“I know you will not be agreeing up in this but trust me though you are in my kingdom, in my territory it still not safe out there. So take it as a request from me. Don’t go outside till I return back. I know you like walking to calm yourself down but wait till I am back” he finished and somehow I felt myself in complete bliss.

Nobody cared for me previously but here everyone is just rotating around me thinking about my protection. As much I loved the feeling, I loathed it as well. I knew it wont last forever but I decided to let it as it is going till I can enjoy it crave it in my mind remembering it to my end.

“Aderyn are you listening?” I heard him speaking.

I nodded not finding my voice but realized he can’t see me so I replied with a “humm” telling him that I was listening.

“Be safe Aderyn. I will be back soon” he told me and disconnected the call.

I kept the phone on my night stand and laying down on my bed, a tear escaped my eye thinking that I will surely miss all of this and specially Dylan when I would be out of here.

But the question is “Will he ever miss me?”

*****

Chapter 21

It's been a day since Dylan called me on my phone. Now I am not saying that I miss him, but I kind of get bored without him. No fight, no irritation and I think I miss all this.

"Lu- uh Adie why are you not saying anything?" I looked to my side to find Jenny looking at me worriedly.

I gave her a smile to which she returned and at continued talking about places and her pack. She is so talkative, but interesting.

"When I knew that you know all about us being werewolves I freaked out. But then when I saw your calm and composed self I calm down a bit and I am proud to have a Luna like you" so told me and I stopped eating.

"What?" was my only question.

"Uh I mean friend like you" she changed and I gave her a suspicious look continuing eating my Chinese.

"We are friends right?" She asked with hope in her eyes and I smiled nodding at her making her beam with happiness.

"Friends" I muttered.

"So is there anything left that you don't know?" She asked playing with her fork.

"I don't know" I shrugged.

"Okay? Why don't you ask me questions and I will try to give you answers" she stated.

"Okay sure?" My reply was more like a question.

"So let me start first. I will ask you questions and you answer them because Bell told me that she doesn't know much about you. You are mysterious" I choked on my good coughing loudly.

"Oh dear! Here drink this" she offered me water and I drank it feeling glad.

"M-Mysterious?" I questioned coughing a little.

"Yeah Mysterious because you have been here from so many days and yet nobody knows much about you" she added

"Okay ask whatever you want" I replied eating my Chinese. But I was little tensed under my smiling facade.

“Okay? So what is your favorite color?” She asked which brought a smile on my face. Of course she was going to ask such questions.

“Turquoise and Brown” I answered.

“What no pink no purple?” She pouted making me laugh at her expression.

“No” I replied

“Strange. Anyways Favorite Food?” She asked and I gestured towards the food I was eating.

“Oh so Chinese it is” she spoke understanding what I meant and I nodded.

“Favorite Place?”

“Las Vegas and London” I told her.

“Wow interesting place” she replied

I nodded and gestured her to continue.

“Favorite Song?” She asked

“Their are many so nothing specific”.

“Okay? Favorite Cartoon?” and I dropped my fork on the plate.

“What? Cartoon? Seriously?” I asked amused with her question.

“Yeah Cartoon. Everyone has tried favorite cartoon” she told me and I tried hard to stop myself from laughing.

“Okay? Interesting. Uh it’s Tom and Jerry” I told her whatever that first came into my mind.

“Tell me about your family” she asked and I stopped eating making my expression void. This was the question which I dreaded the most.

“I mean who all their in your family?” She continued asking.

I cleared my throat and drank water from the glass feeling little uncomfortable.

“Uh their is my mom, Dad, my younger sister” I stopped answering and I hoped she didn’t ask me anything more about it.

“Wow. So when is your birthday?” She asked and I gave her a small smile “I don’t want to share it” I told her.

“Why? Oh do you think I will find about your age?” She wiggled her eyebrows nudging my side with her elbow.

I laughed a little but kept my mouth shut.

“What type of dress do you like to wear?” She asked

“Jeans, shirt and Jacket the usual” I told her.

“Where is your family?” She asked

“Okay enough about me now it’s your turn” I changed the topic and I was glad she didn’t notice my change in behavior.

“Okay ask” she beamed with excitement.

“Why are you always this happy?” I asked her and she scowled.

“What? No favorite color or Favorite stuff?” She furrowed her eyebrows.

“If you don’t want to answer it then it’s fine I will just change the t-” she cut me off “No! No its fine”.

I nodded and waited for her to answer my question.

“I am also happy because I want to. No matter what life has for me I want to live each moment with happiness. God knows what will happen the next moment and we may die or whatever it is. I don’t want to go away from this world thinking that I couldn’t live those moments with my beloved ones happily when I could. So I don’t want any regret filling upon me about it and Moreover it’s good for your skin if you remain happy. No wrinkles” she added making me laugh.

“Interesting” I muttered.

“So next question?” She asked and I began to think what to ask.

“How did you find your mate? Cole?” I asked and she blushed deep red playing with her locks of hair.

“I met him when I was bathing in the stream in my territory” she blushed and I became more interested hearing that.

“What was he doing there?” I asked

“He came with the King for some business to our pack and he told me that he smelt of my my smell and he followed it. He found me there bathing in the stream and he couldn’t stop himself from claiming me his there and then only” she added looking like a Tomato.

“Claiming you?” I asked even though I had a little idea what must have happened there.

“Uh next question please” she changed the topic while I laughed hard pinching her red cheeks.

“Okay I am sorry” I added when I saw her pouting.

I coughed a little and became serious.

I wanted to ask this question from the beginning.

“Why is Dylan like this?” I asked out of the blue and I watched as the color drained from her face.

“A-Alpha? Uh how is he exactly?” She stammered looking here and there nervously.

“Cold, mean, ruthless” I stated.

“Uh I think this is not my place to tell you about him. I think he should be the one telling you all this” she answered and I nodded. May be she was right Dylan should be the one answering me about this.

“But still?” I added. Though I didn’t want to force her still I wanted to know a little about him.

“Uh Adie” she stopped and took a deep breath closing her eyes.

She opened her eyes and and looked at me “I think I can tell you something about him”.

I kept quiet and waited for her to continue.

“Our Alpha Dylan Black Bishop was born to a royal family. He was a pampered child. He would get what he wanted. Everything was going perfect in his family while Our Highness I mean his father was ruling. But one day things changed” she spoke as suddenly her expression changed to a sad one.

“We were attacked suddenly by our enemies when we were not even ready for them. Our King and Queen were murdered before Alpha and he couldn’t do anything to save them” a gasp came out of my mouth hearing that.

“What?” I asked shocked.

“Yes” she nodded sadly and continued “Our Alpha was a very stubborn and smart kid back then but he was too young to witness all this. He was saved by his father’s beta. Our beta knew that we had no chance against them so he did what was right that time. He took Alpha with him and ran away”.

“But the fire of revenge was still there in Alpha. One day the Alpha has an argument about this with the Beta. The Beta took care of him like his own son. He didn’t want to take him back to the kingdom, which was now ruled by the enemies only to be killed. Finally, the Beta saw the flame of revenge in Alpha’s eyes. He understood that it was his duty to rule and save the people from their enemies wrath. So finally, he gave up and began to train Alpha. He held a secret meeting where he called all the Alphas of the pack asking them to protect their future king. It was their duty to do what the King asked and together they trained and made an army to fight against our enemies. We

got the help of the eleven most powerful witches who were willing to do anything for our king as our Highness once saved their lives".

"Actually it's twelve but one of them was the traitor as she helped our enemies in destroying us, which led the other eleven turned against her. Finally, the day came to get back everything. We fought and the witches killed the traitor witch. Our enemies were slayed by our King and finally we won the battle".

"But we lost two important things in that battle" she said with a sad face.

"Our Beta lost his life fighting till the end leaving our King alone and Our King was no more the same childish and happy kid. He turned Cold. He kept all the pain and emotions inside locked inside him. He made himself powerful but he became alone. No was there for him when he slept alone in thunderous nights. No one was there for him to be called as a family. No one was there to hug him when he needed someone. He distant himself from every one. He became this arrogant, rude and" she heaved a sigh "mean".

"But trust me Adie he wasn't like this. It was the situation which made him like this. No one is responsible for this" she finished and I noticed her eyes getting watery.

I felt wetness on my cheeks and I touched to find tear. Unknowingly I was crying and somehow I was feeling pain for that boy who went through so much in his life.

"What was his age when all this happened?" I asked my voice hoarse.

"Thirteen" she finished and I could no longer control the tears that were threatening to roll down. I couldn't believe myself for crying for a person whom I hardly knew. My heart ached and I felt an emotion which I couldn't quiet point out.

I was somehow feeling proud for Dylan being so strong but at the same time felt immense pain which I couldn't describe.

I got up from my seat and walked towards my room leaving Jenny who didn't seem to utter anything.

Somehow, Dylan and me are in the same track. But he wasn't the one who destroyed his family.

Like me.

****

Chapter 22

Aderyn Pov

“Ninety-nine”

“Hundred”

I fell on the ground panting hard. I have been doing the crunch ups from last fifteen minutes and now I’m done.

Oddly I am feeling little weak. I don’t know what’s wrong with me but I’m feeling little dizzy and weak from last two days. I haven’t got to talk to Dylan since that call he did and after knowing about him, I don’t know why but I don’t want to face him.

I huffed out air, my breathing uneven and turned to a side. I propped myself up using my elbow and groaned when I felt my sides aching due to crunch ups.

I got up on my feet and pulled up my top above my head and threw it inside the laundry basket. It was all sweaty and I needed a bath. I walked inside my bathroom and getting rid of my clothes I went to the tub instead of the shower. My heart was beating faster and I was feeling dizzy.

Filling the tub with cold water I jumped in and rested my head against the small attached pillow like structure on the tub. I felt dizzy again.

Moaning in pain because of my sides, I closed my eyes and rubbed my forehead using my finger.

What is wrong with me?

I took the body wash and applied it over my body. After I was done I got out of the tub and I was sure that I would have kissed the ground feeling my head spin. I held the tub to support myself and finally when I found myself normal, I wrapped the towel around my body and went out of the bathroom.

I walked straight towards my bed but before I could reach there, my vision went dark and I found myself loosing my balance. Before I could loose my senses I remember myself falling on the ground with a loud thud hitting my head in the process. I was feeling very weak. All my power drained out of my body and I closed my eyes slipping into darkness.

Dylan Pov

I watched as the Cars speeding up beside me and Blake driving like a maniac.

“Blake will you slow down a little?” I asked and he nodded before slowing down.

“I thought you weren’t going to be back before tomorrow” Blake spoke as he changed the gear.

“Yeah the work got finished quickly” I spoke checking my mobile.

“Or maybe you wanted to see the Luna” he muttered but I heard it.

“Shut up” I growled.

His lips twitched up into a smile but he kept his mouth shut not asking or uttering anything.

I looked out of the window as the scenery passed by. It was true, I was back before a day but my work was all sorted there and what was I supposed to do there? I took the flight and returned back. Not because of Aderyn.

"Yeah! Yeah! keep saying that to yourself. Humans” my wolf scoffed at me.

“What did you just say? You mutt” I growled inside my head at the animal that living inside me.

“You were always thinking about her. You can’t hide this from me. I know everything huh” he scoffed again.

“Shut the f*ck up” I replied and blocked him.

No I wasn’t back for Aderyn. Yes I wasn’t and I will prove this to all.

We reached the house and I got out of my car. As usually some important members were standing in the entrance waiting to greet me. As soon as they saw me that said in chorus.

“Long Live the Alpha”

“Long Live the King”

I nodded at them and entered the house.

“King!” I heard Cole calling me and I turned around to find him along with Jenny.

“Alpha” she bowed her head.

“I see you are back” I spoke and she nodded with a smile. Cole intertwined his hand with hers and smiled down at her. I rolled my eyes at them and turned around to leave.

What’s wrong with them?

I wonder what Aderyn must be doing right now. I checked the time on my watch to see it’s only 8 Am.

“She must be sleeping” I muttered and walked towards my room.

Once inside my room, I took a nice shower and changed into a comfortable black slacks and white shirt.

Laying down on my bed, I closed my eyes for a bit as I was tired but soon found myself drifting to sleep. Sleep enveloped me and I found myself in darkness.

The beeping of my phone made me conscious and I fluttered my eyes open. I checked the time to see it's already 12 pm.

"Damn! I overslept" I muttered and got up from my bed and took my phone and walked towards my office.

Sitting on my chair, I began to work and went through many important files re-checking it again and again for any fault. I felt little weird. I looked around but found no one.

Suddenly my heart beat began to rise and I frowned feeling little worries now.

"Bell" I mind linked her and asked her to come to my office.

She was before me in less than five minutes and I gulped the water down my throat from the glass and kept it aside.

"Where is Aderyn?" was my direct and first question.

"Alpha I haven't met her from morning" she spoke with low voice.

"What do you mean?" I asked my eyebrows pulling up together intrigued wanting to know more.

"Uh I was out for Patrolling" she spoke with a trembling voice.

"Who was suppose to be with her then ?" I asked with a dead low voice.

She gulped audibly and spoke "I left her with Jenny yesterday".

I nodded and called Jenny to my room.

"Alpha!" She bowed before looking at Bell who was trembling terribly with furrowed eyebrows.

"Where is Aderyn?" I asked

"Ad- I mean Luna? I haven't seen her from morning" she spoke and that was enough for me to loose my patience.

I banged my fist on my table and stood up "What the fuck do you mean you didn't see her from morning. I gave you her responsibility while I was away and now I am hearing this" I shouted and both of them flinched. Jenny already tearing up.

“Alpha she didn’t come down for breakfast and I did went to her. I knocked on her door but she didn’t reply. I thought she must be tired training with Train and must be sleeping. So I left her alone for some time” Jenny spoke up her voice trembling and tears already flowing down her face.

“Jenny!” I saw Cole coming in and hugging her whispering something into her ear to calm her down.

I closed my eyes and inhaled deeply calming myself down.

I felt something was weird. I left the three of them in my office and walked towards her room. My steps were long and I even ran to reach quickly.

When I reached her room my heart hammered against my body not because of running but because of feeling restless. Something was definitely wrong.

“Ms. Brookes?” I knocked on her door.

I waited for there was no answer.

“Ms. Brookes?” I knocked louder but yet there was no answer.

“Mate! I want to see my mate”

My wolf began to pace around. My wolf was agitated and seemed panicked.

“Aderyn open the door” I banged on her door. Yet no reply.

“Break the door. I want to see her”

My wolf commanded me. It was rare of him to command me.

“Aderyn I am going to break this door if you don’t open it this instant” I shouted banging on her door.

I sighed in frustration and made up my mind. Without wasting any more time, with one blow the door flew open. I looked around inside her room and what got my attention was the figure that was lying there on the floor.

“Aderyn!” I panicked and ran to her.

She was wrapped with a towel around her body and she lied there on the floor senseless.

“Aderyn!” I called her when she didn’t open her eyes.

I took her face in my hand and patted her cheeks calling her “Aderyn wake up! Aderyn”.

She didn’t respond me. I touched her forehead and then it clicked me.

“Damn! Her body is heating up. She has fever” I muttered and cradled her up from under her knees and back into my arms.

I kept her down on the bed and mind linked Cole asking him to call the pack Doctor.

She looked tired and I could see faint dark circles forming under her eye.

What was she tensed about? I wondered.

“Damn!” I cursed when I noticed what was she wearing.

She was still in her towel and now it was hard for me to control my wolf. He was trying control over my body wanting to mate with Aderyn.

“Let me out. I want my mate” he surfaced over me speaking in his beast voice.

“She is not well. You don’t even think about that” the human side of me tried to control him.

“Let me out” he growled

My hands trembled because of the inner fight I was fighting. Still it began to reach towards Aderyn’s towel. As much as I wanted to deny it but the human side of me also wanted to mate with his beautiful mate who was lying unconsciously.

“No! Damn it” I tried to stop of my wolf.

“My mate” he was just not listening to me.

“King!” We heard a voice and my wolf took it as his chance to control over me. In no time my hands were on her towel trying to rip it. I closed my eyed not wanting to see it and with all my force I got up and ran outside towards my room. I locked myself inside and I couldn’t control him any longer.

He was furious on me for stopping him. He took over my body and I watched as my fingers changed into claws. In no time, the look of my bedroom changed. Everything was destroyed and clawed. My wolf wanted to destroy everything and I let him because I knew it was the only way to control the animal.

Finally, when he was done and his anger subsided. I slide down against the wall sitting on the floor panting.

“Alpha?” I heard a voice inside my mind.

It was the doctor who was trying to mind link me.

“Julie!” I mind linked.

“Alpha are you alright?” She asked worried about her King.

“Yes. Did you check Aderyn?” I asked nervously.

“Yes. She has fever and her body shut down wanting some rest. It seems like she was pushing herself too much which resulted her to get tired quickly. But she will be alright soon. She needs a good sleep and it will do” she spoke calmly.

“What about her temperature?” I asked worried.

“It is normal for her to have rise in temperature but she will be back soon to normal” she finished and I sighed feeling little relaxed.

“But Alpha you need to see something” she spoke and by the way she spoke she sounded little worried.

“What is it?” I asked panicking again.

“Please come here. I think you should see this with your own eyes” she spoke and I wasted no time getting up and running back to her room.

Thankfully, Julie had changed her to a tops and trousers or it would’ve been difficult for me to control myself any longer.

“What is it?” I asked looking at her pale face.

Julie seemed little worried as she tried to turn Aderyn on her stomach. I helped her and she raised her top up and there I saw marks.

“It looks as if she was whipped” Julie spoke softly and my mind became blank seeing the marks. It was fading but you can still see that if you concentrated on it.

Realizing that she must have been whipped for the second time of the day my wolf tried to take over with anger. He wanted to kill the person who whipped his mate and let alone fir touching her.

“King please calm down” Julie tried to calm me.

“I c-can’t control h-him” it was the human side of me who spoke.

“Alpha inhale Luna’s smell” Julie spoke up quickly and I got down on my knees, and placed my face on the crook of her neck, inhaling her chocolate and rose smell which calmed me.

When I was normal, I touched her skin which had the marks feeling sad that I wasn’t there for her when she needed me.

Who did that to her and why?

My wolf growled wanting revenge.

Aderyn doesn't seem that weak as I thought her to be.

******

Chapter 23

Aderyn pov

I could feel myself getting back to my senses but it was hard for me to open my eyes. It was like I couldn't open them. As if I didn't have any control over my receptors.

Though my eyes were closed, I could still sense and feel what was going around me. I felt something wet placed on my forehead and someone touching my cheek. I could feel tingles wherever I was being touched.

I wanted to look at the person but soon myself getting back to slumber and I slipped into darkness.

My eyes fluttered open and immediately I felt my eyes squinting adjusting with the light. I was feeling good now. I tried to look around but found something wet on my forehead. My forehead creased in confusion as I slowly used my hand to reach the thing which was on my forehead.

I touched something wet and when I pulled it of my forehead I found it as a cloth. I groaned and tried to get up but something was stopping me from doing so. I looked towards my right and was shocked to find a figure sleeping next to my bed on the chair.

It was no other than Dylan.

Oh my God! What was he doing here?

I noticed his hand tangled with mine right hand as he held it as if his life depended on it. He was sleeping soundly. Though I doubt him to be comfortable on that wooden chair still his feature seemed calm as he held my hand.

His hair was a mess. I notice he was wearing a black slacks with a white shirt. His face was void of expression as he was sleeping still he looked little tensed.

I pulled myself up and rested myself against the headboard.

What happened?

I tried to remember what happened and how I reached this bed. I closed my eyes and tried to remember. I was feeling dizzy. I took a bath then I walked out of the bathroom and then I fell on the ground.

"That reminds me" I panicked muttering to myself.

"Who changed me?" I questioned to go one in particular as I eyes my dress. I was changed into a white shirt and white loose pants.

I looked towards Dylan panicked.

“Did he?”

“No he didn’t. He wouldn’t do that” I spoke to myself.

“You are awake” I heard a husky voice and I looked to my right to find Dylan already awake looking at me intently.

“How are you feeling now?” He asked as he got up from his seat and came to me. He sat on the edge of the bed and surprising me he reached his hand to touch my forehead. I shivered due to his touch and the sparks that flew through our body was electrifying.

“Thank God your temperature is down” he spoke softly as he didn’t pull his hand off me instead he trailed it down to my neck placing it there.

“You had a fever. You passed out and fell on the floor senseless” he spoke his words filled with worriedness.

“Thank to the Lords I reached here on time. Why are you so careless? You should’ve taken care of yourself” and he was back to scolding.

He trailed his fingers up and placed his rough but big palm against my cheek.

“You got me worried there” he spoke softly now.

His fingers lingered on my cheek for some seconds then he pulled away and I began to miss his touch very disturbingly.

“Who did that to you Aderyn?” He asked out of nowhere. He looked serious now.

“What?” I spoke and found my voice hoarse and I was dying for water.

As if knowing it, Dylan stretched his hand out and gave me a glass of water to drink. I took it gratefully and gulped it down my throat feeling relieved.

I gave the glass back to Dylan as he kept it aside on the night stand and stared back at me.

“Now back to the topic, who did that to you Aderyn?” He asked again and I stared back at him confused.

“Who did what?” I asked confused.

“Aderyn” he sighed “the doctor changed your clothes and at informed me that you had fever but apart from that she showed me your back which had faint marks like someone whipped you” he told me and I looked towards the other side.

“I don’t know what you are talking about” I blurted out

He held my chin between his fingers and made me look back at him.

“I just want to know who did that to you Aderyn. Just tell me” he spoke softly.

I pulled away from his touch and looked the other way “I don’t want to talk about this”.

“And why is that?” He asked as his tone sounded irritation and frustration.

“I just don’t want to speak about it” I told him as I crossed my arms across my chest.

“What is wrong with you? Why are always like this? You could at least tell me what happened to you” he asked frustrated.

“I don’t want to share anything” I blurted out angrily and this time he held my arms angrily which made me look at him.

“Fine then I will find it by myself” he said as he stated deep into my eyes. It was like as if he was staring right through me. As if he could see my soul. So intense. I didn’t understand what he was trying to do. I frowned at him as I tried to wiggle my arms out of his hold, but he only tightened his grip on my arms.

“What are you doing?”

“Let go of me” I snapped

“Damn it!” He shouted making me flinch.

“Why can’t I read you? Are you not thinking anything?” He asked as he rubbed his palm on his face frustrated.

“You were trying to read my mind without my permission?” I spoke slowly. Bell did tell me about Dylan’s power but I never expected him to use at me.

“Don’t you understand I don’t want to share anything? You need to respect somebody’s privacy” I snapped as I got off from the bed.

“I don’t need to hear your lecture” he scoffed crossing his hand across is chest.

“What are you? What would think of me if I try to find about your past without your permission?” I snapped

“I respect your privacy Dylan and you need to learn how to respect others too. For God Sake! I was beginning to feel guilty for fighting with you let alone argue with you when I found about your pas-” I stopped mid sentence when I realized what I just blurted out.

He stared at me shocked but soon his face contorted with anger and he took hold of my arms as he pushed me against the wall.

“Who told you about that?” He hissed as he shoved me roughly against the wall.

“Dylan” I tried to calm him down but it was as if like my voice wasn’t reaching his ear. He growled and I noticed the change in his eyes. His wolf was trying to surface. The color of his eyes was changing to coal black and for the first time in my life I felt scared.

No matter how strong I was, I couldn’t take an Alpha down and that to a King.

“Dylan” I called him again.

“Who the fuck gave you the right to know about my past? Who told you about that? Tell me I will kill that person” he growled and my heart beat rose feeling fear for Jenny. I couldn’t tell him about Jenny. I shouldn’t have asked Jenny in the first place.

“Tell me” he growled as he held my arms painfully.

“Just because you had a wonderful life, always taking everything lightly, fucking joking around doesn’t mean everyone has a good past. Why do you know about life? You know nothing about life and pain really is. You just don’t know how it feels when you loose someone who is close to you” he growled and I felt my eyes getting watery.

“Dylan I understan-” I tried to say but he interrupted cutting me off “No you don’t” he snarled.

“Please Liste-” he cut me again “I knew it” he said as he shoved me against the wall and let me go.

“I knew it. I shouldn’t have kept you here” he gritted his teeth as he rubbed his forehead trying to calm himself down.

“Dylan” I called tears already flowing down my cheeks.

“You know what I just hate you. Every single thing of yours. Your face, your eyes, everything” he said and it was like an arrow went through me shattering me to pieces. I felt immense pain listening those words from him.

“Dylan please try to understand” I spoke as I tried to touch him but he slapped my hands away angrily.

“Don’t touch me” he growled enunciating each words.

“I can’t see your face any longer. Pack your stuff and just go away” he hissed and not even looking at me he walked out of the room closing the door with a loud bang.

“Dylan” I called as I began to slide down against the wall crying and sobbing hard.

I couldn't believe that Dylan could speak such harsh words to me. If it was someone else instead of him then I wouldn't have cared so much but the what Dylan told me went right to my heart. I felt so pain.

I got up from the floor and walked out of the room. I walked out of the house and began to walk inside the woods.

Soon I found myself running. I was crying and most importantly I felt anger. I watched as the Thunder strikes in the clouds and I knew it was going to be raining soon but I didn't care. It was dark her I could see everything and I ran trying to get rid of the pain which I felt.

I wasn't angry upon Dylan. Anybody in his place would have reached the same. I would've been angry if anyone tried to find out about my past without my permission. It was my memory. It was my privacy. I could understand what Dylan must have been feeling right now.

I ran till I got myself panting hard and huffing out air. Finally, my legs gave up and I fell on the ground feeling devastated. No sooner, It began to rain. I cried and sat in my knees hugging myself as I cried opening my wounds again.

"You are wrong Dylan" I screamed.

"I do know how it feels to loose someone who is close to you" I shouted as I felt myself getting drenched under the rain. My clothes were wet and I knew I must be looking like a mess.

"I do know" I screamed as I cried hugging myself. Dylan has unknowingly wounded my already wounded heart more.

The pain was rising more and more.

Memories began to flash through my mind as I remember how my parents died. How I killed my sibling to save the other sibling. How the one died in my arms and I was not able to do anything to save her. My Nancy. My little sister who died in my arms and I wasn't able to save her. I was helpless.

I had to kill my elder brother Ryan to save her yet I couldn't save any one of them. How helpless I was back then. How I tried to kill myself trying to jump off a bridge.

I screamed as I pulled my hair angrily not wanting to remember it.

"You are wrong Dylan. You are so wrong" I screamed as I felt my head spinning again and I collapsed on the ground still under the rain.

How much I wish to die wanting myself to free from all these pain and sufferings. I am suffering and I don't want to live.

*****

Chapter 24

Dylan Pov

I don't know why am I angry but I couldn't control myself when I knew that she knows about my past. Who told her that?

I never wanted to share something which was related to my past with her. There was nothing which I could share. What would I have told her? My past is something which I do not want to remember. And the two thing which I hated the most was sympathy and pity.

She said she was starting to pity me. I loathed it when someone pitied on me. I just wanted to know who gave her those marks? She was just so stubborn and didn't want to share it. Fine! I understand that. But the fact that I can't read her disturbs me a lot.

She shouldn't have argued with me. I know I was just too much. I shouldn't have reacted that way. She was still sick. She was weak. She couldn't even fight back to me properly and I reacted such horribly.

I was just angry. My wolf also doesn't like the fact that she knew about my past. He is also angry. But deep down, we were angry because what if she leave us after knowing everything that happened to us in our past. Nobody wants to live with a broken man. Why would she live here if she finds out that I am her broken mate. I can't be healed. I am wounded till my last breath. I don't think I can ever keep her happy.

She deserves happiness.

I sighed as I watched out of the window of my office as it poured heavily. It was raining heavily and it was dark outside. I think I should apologize to Aderyn. Maybe somebody had told her about me thinking that she should know as she is the Luna.

Now when I think of it, it is better that she knows. I don't have tell her anything when she asks about my family later.

I shouldn't have told her all that. It was my anger who was speaking that time. I told her to leave.

"Damn!"

"I never wanted to say that to her" I whispered closing my eyes as regret passed through my body.

"Alpha!" I heard a voice and I turned around to find a ball of light behind me forming into a human figure. I knew who it was. It was one of the eleven witches.

“Estelle Helliot?” I asked confused seeing her after a long time. She was the witch of light and future.

“Alpha!” She spoke once she came back to her real form.

Her blonde hair cascading down to her waist. Her black eyes showed worriedness. She was woman with round face, may be 5′4 in height and was little chubby. The black cape she wore made her look like a typical witch.

“Estelle is everything alright?” I asked as I eyed her worried face.

“I sense something bad is going to happen” she spoke as she closed her eyes.

“Something which is not good” she spoke again.

I was about to ask her what was going on when Blake barged in through the door “Alpha!”

He stopped when he noticed Estelle standing before me with closed eyes.

“Estelle” he said as he lowered his head showing respect to her. Estelle nodded opening her eyes.

“Alpha you need to come. There is something weird going on with the kids and all the pups” he said. His voice was filled with worriedness and restlessness.

“What is going on?” I asked confused

“The kids and all the pups have started to cry without any reason and they don’t seem to stop anytime soon” he spoke with worriedness.

“What? Why are they crying?” I asked now more confused “and all are crying at the same time?” I asked to which he nodded.

“Kids specially werepups are attached to their Luna. If something happens to her that get this pain and they try to signal it through crying” Estelle spoke and as her words hit my ear I was already running towards Aderyn’s room.

“Aderyn!” I called when I barged into her room. The window was open and the curtains were flying due to wind and the floor near the window was wet due to rain. It was still raining outside. I looked around but she was nowhere in sight. Her scent was also faint still I could smell her scent.

I followed her scent and it led me towards the front door and it fainted there because of the rain. It only means one thing. She was outside.

“She went into the woods?” I whispered frustrated.

I quickly gathered some of the pack members and mind linked those who were patrolling to search for her. I ordered the members to shift into their wolf forms and spread everywhere into the woods and search for her. In no time they shifted and ran into the wood searching for her.

But I knew someone who could find her easily in this heavy rain without any difficulty and she was Lily.

Lily was trained specially for all this. She doesn't depend upon the person's scent. She could find her with her sense and training.

"Lily come to the front immediately" I mind linked her and in no time she was before me wearing her small pink night suit.

"Aderyn is missing. Go find her" I told her.

"What? In this time of night? No way I am going out in this rain to find that stupid human" she spoke disobeying me and in no time her neck was in my hand as I pushed her against the wall tightening my grip.

"Do not speak about your Luna like that. I won't tolerate it and How dare you disobey your king?" I spoke and the animal side of me growled at her.

"I- I am sorry Alpha" she managed to speak with utmost difficulties.

"I don't have any problem with the Queen but the fact that she human doesn't go well with me" she spoke holding my wrist trying to free herself.

"Human or not she is still your Luna and your Queen and you can't disrespect her" I spoke and let her go when she nodded. She fell down on the floor coughing hard.

"Now go and find her. I want her safe and back in the house. Do you understand?" I commanded.

"Yes Alpha!" She bowed her head and got up into her feet. With a last glance my way she ran outside of the house and jumped into the air shifting into her brown wolf. She howled and ran into the woods doing as I ordered her to do.

"I know she doesn't respect Aderyn but that doesn't mean she can speak rubbish about her. Whether she likes it or not she will have to respect Aderyn as her Queen" I whispered and was surprised by my own words. I am agreeing Aderyn being the Queen.

"I just hope you are alright" I spoke worriedly.

"Cole did you find her?" I asked through the mind link. It has been a hour since everyone has been searching for her. The rain has seemed to slow down to drizzling.

"Not yet Alpha. I just can't smell her scent" he replied back.

“Blake how are the kids?” I asked him and he shooked his head negatively telling me that they haven’t stopped crying.

“What is going on Estelle?” I asked as she stood silently looking out of the window.

“Estelle?” I asked when she didn’t reply.

I went to her and turned her around. Her eyes were glowing and their was no eye balls. If anyone else saw that he or she would have fainted thinking her as a ghost but I knew what she was doing. She was performing some type of her spell trying to find Aderyn.

“You haven’t marked her?” She spoke as she came back as her eye balls showed subsiding the light.

“No” I spoke slowly.

“It is difficult for me to find her” she told me as she closed her eyes.

“She is a human” I spoke and watched her eyelids fluttered opening.

“What was going on in her mind when you last saw her?” She asked looking curious.

I scowled to her question and pursed my lips. “I don’t know” I spoke truthfully.

“I thought you could read someone’s mind” she spoke as she frowned at me in confusion.

“It seems as if I can’t read her” I told her and watched as a knowing expression passed through her face and she nodded understanding.

I was about to ask her what she understood when Cole came back running.

“Alpha we found her” he spoke as he was panting and he was wearing a shorts now.

“What? Where is she?” I asked restless.

“Lily found her deep inside the woods” he spoke

I knew it. I knew that only she could find her. As much as she disrespects Aderyn her wolf respects Aderyn that much being her Queen.

I ran towards the front Cole and Blake already following me.

“She found her unconscious on the ground” he spoke and I cursed myself. It was all because of me. She went through all this only because of me.

I stood on the front with some of my members and Julie waiting for her. I noticed a figure emerging out of the woods and I recognized it as Lily. She ran towards us and I found Aderyn on her back senseless.

“Aderyn!” I called as I took hold of her and pulled her to my arms.

A heard a cry and I looked at Kira Lily’s wolf whimpering at Aderyn seeing her drenched and unconscious.

Aderyn was looking pale. Her body was soaked in rain and cold.

“Aderyn!” I called her patting her cheeks.

“Aderyn open your eyes” I pleaded my voice filled with desperation.

“Alpha let me see” Julie knealed down beside me trying to take Aderyn.

“No! Don’t touch her” my wolf growled. He was panicking and he didn’t want his wolf to be taken away.

“Black let her check Aderyn” Estelle interfered as she touched my shoulder and I growled angrily.

“Please Black understand the situation. Aderyn wants check up and Julie won’t hurt her” Estelle tried to make my stubborn animal understand.

He whimpered and understanding reluctantly let Aderyn go.

Julie took her to her arms and started to check her.

“Oh no! It’s not good she is hyperventilating” she spoke worriedly as she checked her pulse.

“Let’s take her back to the room” Julie spoke and in no time I took of Aderyn and cradled her up to my chest. I took her to her room and made her comfortably on her bed. Julie was fast to check her.

“Alpha I need to change her clothes before she starts to get Hypothermia” Julie told me as I nodded slowly went out of the room even if I didn’t want to.

“Alpha!” I heard Cole looking at me sadly.

“Don’t worry she will be alright” Blake spoke softly and I watched as Lily came running towards us wearing her shorts and t-shirt. Her face reflected worriedness. She was as worried as we were.

Bell and Jenny too joined us after knowing about Aderyn.

I hope everything gets better soon.

I hope she is alright.

*****

Chapter 25

Aderyn Pov

I found myself in darkness. I was surrounded by pitch black balls and I couldn't quite recognize where I was. I was just lost and trapped. No matter where I looked I found myself lost and alone.

Though I was alone I found myself in peace. Somehow I do not want to get out of this place. As if, someone read my thoughts the place where I was still standing began to change and I found myself going somewhere. I looked around when the place changed completely and I found myself in my.. past?

I looked around to see a family taking a family picture outside of a house while a little version of me was fighting with my elder brother Ryan for sitting with my Mom.

That was the best memory I had.

>Flashback <

15 years old Aderyn.

Everything was just going perfect. I got good grades from my School. I loved my younger sister Nancy who was only Three years old and I was pampered and loved by my older brother Ryan who 21 years old.

My family was perfect. Everything was perfect.

"Honey Sleep now. It was just a dream sweetheart" My mom cooed and tried to relax me with her soothing words.

"Mom you stay here till I sleep" I whined as I held her thigh and she smiled down at me and sat at the edge of the bed.

I just woke up shouting and panting. I saw a dream where I found myself alone. Whoever I called, they all faded away in my dream. I hated living alone and the fact that I was alone made me panicked.

"Of course Sweetheart! I'm always here for you" she patted my cheeks and hummed a lullaby which she hummed for Nancy.

"Mom?" I asked now sounding sleepy.

"When is Ryan going to return back?" I asked sleepily.

“He will be back soon baby” my Mom said and hummed again. Soon I slipped into darkness.

I groaned waking up, hearing some sounds. Someone was shouting.

What was going on?

I got up from the bed and made my way to the door. It was still dark outside. I checked my watch to find its only four in the morning.

Turning the door knob, I got out of my room and slowly made my way towards the staircase.

“What are you doing here Ryan?” I peeped a little to see what was going on.

I found Ryan standing near the sofa with a hardened expression looking at Dad who was talking while Mom was sobbing sitting on the sofa.

Ryan looked different, he had some facial hair and he looked muscular.

It had been a year since I last saw Ryan. Mom told me that he joined some job and he is not going to be back soon.

I was so excited seeing him that I was ready to jump the staircase and run to him but his next words stopped me from doing so.

“Just come with me to the Agency and I will leave” he spoke coldly to Dad.

“I told you I have left all that and I don’t want to do anything with the Agency and you how dare come here after you left your family, us all for all-” my Dad was cut off by him who looked beyond angry now “This is not my Family. You all are not my family” he screamed.

My eyes widened hearing this. What is wrong with him?

“After Killing my parents you adopted me thinking that I will be your son and you will remorse what you did to me but you were so wrong. The agency told me everything. So now, you better stop this nonsense” he hissed his eyes were bloodshot red.

“Ryan I am really sorry for what I did to your parents but it was my work. The agency told you that I killed them then why didn’t you ask What was the reason for me of killing them?” my Dad spoke his voice low regretfully.

“The Agency gave me the order to kill them. It was all there work not mine. This is the reason why I left the Agency. It is no good for us Ryan try to understand” my Dad tried to touch Ryan but he jerked away and glared at Dad.

“I don’t know all this. I only know that you” he pointed a finger towards my Dad “were the one who killed my real parents”.

“Did we never loved you? Was we torturing you that you turned so easily against us?” my Mom spoke for the first time sobbing.

“Just come to me to the Agency. You can’t leave the Agency” Ryan hissed at Dad ignoring mom.

“No. I am not going back anywhere” my Dad spoke and I made my way downstairs.

“Then prepare to die” I stopped on my tracks near the window of the stairs when I heard Ryan speaking those words.

“W-What? You will kill me?” My Dad spoke dumbstruck.

“Yes. I have to. That’s my work and the Agency told me to do so” he spoke icily.

“I can’t believe I called you my Son. I was so prou-” my Dad stopped his voice trembling probably because he was hurt.

“I am not going anywhere and you” my Dad spoke angrily “Get out of my house”.

“I warned you” I heard Ryan taking a sigh and the front door closing with a bang. He was gone.

I was so shocked hearing this. First of all I found Ryan wasn’t my brother. Top to that Dad killed someone. Dad was a murderer?

Thirdly, Dad worked for some Agency? But what Agency? I thought he was a Boxing Instructor.

Unknowingly I found my cheeks wet. I was really hurt but at the same time disappointed for keeping me in dark.

I took a step down and was fully in front of the window and I looked outside to find everything dark.

“I can’t believe he is against us. His own family” I heard my Mom crying.

“Calm down honey it was all my fault. I shouldn’t have adopted him” my Dad spoke slowly.

“I loved him” my Mom sounded so broken.

“Me too” my Dad uttered

“Hey! What is this?” I heard my mom’s curious voice.

“Wher- Oh no don’t touch i-” I couldn’t hear anything anymore as I heard a loud ear piercing scream and a blast and soon found myself forcefully breaking through the window glasses and flying out of the house and landing on the ground. I looked up to see flames of fire coming out of my house. I started to feel pain everywhere and I was losing my senses.

What is going on?

I tried to see my hand but I felt immense pain when I did so. I heard sounds of some people and soon I lost my senses.

What is going on?

I woke up to hear something beeping. Where am I?

I felt pain everywhere in my body and I could hardly open my eyes.

“Mom?” I heard my own voice

“Dad?” I winced in pain and tears began to roll down my cheeks because of the pain.

Fluttering my eyes open, I looked around to find myself in a hospital room. I looked towards my left to find IV and machines which were attached to my body. My hand was plastered and there was something on my neck which made me uncomfortable in turning my neck. My other hand was bandaged while my legs were bandaged too.

What happened to me?

I winced in pain when I tried to sit. My body was like not responding to me. I marked the cuts on my arms and my skin.

“Wat-Water” I groaned searching for water.

“Here” I heard a feminine voice speaking and I was given a glass of water. I couldn’t take it as I felt pain and as if the person understood this, she reached the glass to my mouth and I gulped down the water in one go.

“Are you feeling better now?” She asked again and I hummed in response. I tried to look up and found a lady dressed in a nurse uniform smiling kindly at me.

“What happened? Why am I here?” I asked desperately wanting to know.

“I think you must be tired now why don’t you take some rest?” She offered and though I didn’t wanted to but my body gave up on me and I hummed in response. She helped me and as soon as I hit the pillow I slipped back to slumber with a blank mind.

When I came back to my senses again, I fluttered my eyes open and sat up on the hospital bed. The beeping of the machine was now annoying me.

“Mom?” I called her

“Dad!” I called again feeling irritated when no one came.

“Sweetie you are awake” I heard a voice and looked up to find the nurse coming through the door towards me.

“What happened and why am I here?” I asked as I felt a shooting pain on my limbs and I winced in pain when I tried to move.

“Relax sweetie” she tried to touch me.

“No tell me first, why am I here?” I asked again desperately.

“You have a broken forearm sweetie don’t move so much” she avoided my question.

“Are you going to tell me?” I snapped

She sighed and nodded “I will tell you everything but before that you have to promise me that you will be strong and you will listen everything till the end without panicking” she told me and I reluctantly nodded.

“There was a Fire in your house. People found you lying outside of the house with broken glasses. That thought that you must have flied out of the glass during the fire” she told me and then only I began to remember everything.

Last time, I heard my mom and dad shouting. I found them downstairs fitting with Ryan. Ryan was there. I found that he wasn’t my real brother. He was adopted. He came back to take Dad to some Agency. He warned to kill dad. Dad killed his parents. Ryan left our house warning us. Mom crying. Dad was sad. I was standing near the window on the staircase. I overheard everything. Then a blast and I was lying outside.

As my mind began to register everything I began to panic feeling my heart rate increasing second by second.

“Mom and Dad?” I asked slowly and looked at her desperately for an answer which would erase away all my bad thoughts.

She looked at me painfully and sadly as she shooked her head negatively and that was all needed for me to break down. I cried and screamed realizing what just happened and I could no longer meet my parents. I thrashed around when she tried to hold me. I cried louder and screamed feeling immense pain in my body.

I was alone?

Forever?

Ryan, my Brother was the one who did this?

He killed my Mom and Dad?

Why?

All these questions rang into my mind as I began to feel my heart ache of losing my family. I was an orphan now. Why is all this happening with me?

What did I do?

What am I going to do now?

******

Chapter 26

It's been fifteen days. Fifteen days until I last saw my parents, my family. I am still in this hospital laying like a dead human on the bed. My hand is still plastered and some bandages of my body has been removed. My body has started to heal but my soul is still in pain.

Some people who were close to my family came to meet me. Some showed condolence while some of them tried to console me when I broke down in front of them. But none stayed for too long. With a facade of sadness and pity they payed me a little visit showering me with flower and Money but no one understood that I didn't want all this. I just wanted to go back to my family. I hated living alone.

They said that there was some wire problem which caused the house on fire but little did they knew I was present there what happened and the murderer was roaming outside freely.

The police investigators took my statement about what happened and I gave them the information truthfully wanting and hoping for justice but as if the whole world has turned against me the cops are just not doing anything and they said they didn't get any evidence to prove my statement.

Evidence?

Can't they see my condition? Is it not enough to prove everything?

I have crying endlessly. It's just too much for me. I am feeling so helpless and weak. I couldn't do anything to save them. I am just good for nothing. I didn't even get a chance to say goodbye to them heck I couldn't even attend their funeral.

I am the worst daughter in this world.

Getting up from the bed, I looked outside of the window to see it's already dark. I got down on my feet and winced when I felt my muscles flexing. Still I got up on my foot and made my way towards the door. I couldn't stand any longer. Loneliness is killing me.

I walked out of the door and to the elevator. I walked out of the elevator when the door pinged open. It was the ground floor. I saw some people sitting on a bench, some were crying, a girl in the reception who was busy scribbling something on her notepad.

Some people who visited me gave me some money. I was relieved that I kept it in my pant pockets. I walked out of the hospital and luckily no one noticed me. I was yelping in pain whenever I walked quicker. I just wanted to get away.

As soon as I was in the road I looked for a Cab. It was difficult because no driver, pulled up before a girl who was in hospital patient uniform and had a plastered hand and bandages all over the body. Finally a man pulled up before me and I gave him the address where he had to take me.

All the way, I watched out of the window lifelessly thinking this all to be a dream. I snapped out of my thoughts when the Cab came to a halt. I watched out of the window to see I have reached my destination. The familiar place which was no longer had anything to do with me. I was a foreigner now.

I got out of the Cab and played the driver he looked towards my once which was called home, and looked at me sympathetically before driving away with a last glance.

I looked back at my house and tears began to roll down as I realized it was no longer my house. It was now a mess. It looked like a Horror house which we saw in movies. Police Banners were pasted on the door but I couldn't stop myself. I walked to the door and tried to open. It clicked open and I walked in. Everything was burnt. Nothing was left. Everything was turned into debris and I couldn't recognize a single thing.

It was the place where my Mom and Dad stood last time I was them. I fell on my knees and screamed.

"Please come back!" I cried and signed.

I don't know how longer I sat their crying but I just couldn't control myself. My emotions were just flowing away in tears. The longer I sat the longer I got my answer to the question why was I still alive.

"Ryan" I uttered the name with disgust.

"You have to pay for it" my words were filled with venom and hatred.

"I am coming for you Brother" I spat with hatred.

I wiped away my tears using my sleeves and close my eyes.

"What should I do?" I uttered.

I was so engrossed in my own little world that I couldn't feel the presence behind me. When I felt it somebody grabbed my arm and held something on my nose from behind. I couldn't even get the time to register to struggle when I was already knocked down and I found myself loosing my senses.

My eyes fluttered open and I looked around trying to acknowledge where I was. I was somewhere in an unfamiliar place. It was a small room, a size of a bathroom and I was lying on a bench which was attached to the wall. It looked like a cell.

I began to panic and I got up immediately, wasting no time trying to open the door. It was locked from outside. I knocked and banged on the door asking to open the door by no one heard me or it was like no one paid attention to me.

I was now beginning to suffocate. It was really a small room with no Windows. Only a bench and a toilet pan. The light bulb lightened the small room and I began to feel nauseous seeing the pan. It was so dirty.

“Open the door!” I banged again.

“Let me out”

“Please open the door”

“Let me out!”

I screamed and cried.

“What is going on?” I uttered to myself as I sat on the bench and leaned against the wall.

It was already five to six hours. I kept on banging and screaming yet no one heard or even replied me. Finally, I heard the Jingling of keys and I got on my feet waiting for the person to open the door.

The door opened and revealed a tall bulky and muscular black man who was wearing all black and was bald.

“Who are you and why am I here?” I asked in fear.

Instead of answering me, he took hold of my arm and dragged me outside. All the way I tried to get myself free from his grip but I couldn’t. I did notice the other rooms which were similar to mine and I even heard banging and screaming from the room.

“Where are you taking me?” I cried

He didn’t give me any attention and continued to drag me.

Finally we stopped before a door and I furrowed my eyebrows in confusion.

“Leave me” I tried to yank my hand away but he tightened his hold and we both entered the room.

I looked around to find a typical office type of room. The room was a modern as well as vintage room. The room consisted of book shelves, and there was no window. But there was glass window and if someone went near it someone could look through it to another room.

I shuddered feeling weird.

“I see you are grown up now” I heard a voice and I looked towards my front to find a man who must be in his late 40's. He had black hair and black eyes. He was sitting behind his desk and by his frame I could tell that he was a short man.

“W-Who are you?” I stammered

He nodded towards the man beside me and the man left the room without uttering any word.

“I am Derek Williams” he spoke and signaled me to take a seat before him.

I took slow steps and sat on the chair before his desk.

“Why am I here?” I asked

“Your father worked here” he spoke nonchalantly. Hearing about my father made my eyes watery.

“Worked here? But he was a Boxing Instructor” I replied little surprised.

“No he wasn’t” he told me with a neutral expression.

“Yes your Father was your instructor but not a Boxing Instructor. He worked for me and he was my friend”.

“Friend?” I asked

“This is my private organisation and we are The Fast Eye Agency” he told me and as his words sunk in I recognized the word “Agency” which I overheard last time, from my parents and Ryan’s conversation.

“What Agency?” I asked slowly

He gave me a smirk and eyes me up and down.

“We make Assassins” he told me and for some minutes I thought as if he was joking.

“Y-You are lying. This isn’t possible” I heard myself uttering.

“This is true. Your Father, Dave who was my friend worked here as a trainer. He made amateurs like you into Assassins” he told me and I snapped at him “You are lying. My father would never do that. He was a good man. He would never do that”.

“Watch your tongue girl” he hissed and I shut my mouth feeling scared.

“Your Father worked to me and once he was an Assassin too. But he left the job when he met your mother. Instead he chose to become a trainer who quit killing people” he told me and I listened feeling weird now.

“But after working for ten years he suddenly chose to quit the job again” I spoke and I began to rearrange the puzzle pieces thinking where it was leading.

“My agency is a top secret agency. Everything here is confidential and your father knew too much about us. We tried to stop him, change his mind on quitting buy bribing him that we will increase his salary but he was too stubborn and he quit his job”.

“Your Father once killed a family who were our target and we had information that they were the terrorists. That is when he got your brother Ryan. He took him and adopted him as his own son but look what happened now hu?” He smirked

“I told everything to Ryan and being loyal to his real parents he chose to kill your family for revenge. Revenge is a very bad thing you know” he smirked more and I was completely shocked.

“I-It was you?” I stuttered

“It was you who ordered him to kill my parents?” I asked and watched as he looked at me arrogantly.

“How dare you?” I snapped and got up from my seat running to him.

I held him by his collar and slapped him hard using one hand. I shoved him and soon I was held by someone who dragged me backwards away from him.

“You killed my parents. My family. How could you? You made me an orphan. You turned my Brother into a monster. You are such a wicked man. You call yourself a friend?” I spat on him.

“Hold her” he commanded and the person who was holding me grabbed me by my waist and arms keeping me in place.

“Now Now don’t be like that. It was not my choice. It was your brother’s choice after all” he sneered and stood up from his and came to me and held my chin between his fingers.

“But now you are going to take your Father’s place. I know I can see the same fire which I have seen in your Father. He was the best but the biggest mistake he made by choosing his family over my agency. He should’ve been loyal” he hissed and shoved my face to the left.

“Me? Never” I spat on his face.

He wiped the spit using his handkerchief and smiled wickedly at me.

“You are going to pay for it. You are going to be an Assassin and that’s final” he commanded and went back to his seat.

“Never. Did you hear me Never” I shouted and he ordered the man to take me back to the room.

I kept on thrashing and struggling.

I was thrown back in that room where I woke up last time.

“Open the door” I banged and screamed.

I was kept in that room for nearly a week. I would mark the lights which came into my room. Whenever the bulb lit on, it’s means it is the night time. I have been kept hungry and sometimes some people come to my room trying to convince me to give up.

Every time I refused and as a result I have been whipped and abused by them to make me give up physically.

I would like to die rather live a like this.

I am lying on the dusty floor now, eyeing the ceiling blankly. All my energy is drained now. I can’t even speak. But I’m happy. May be I’m going to meet my parents soon.

The door of my room opened and I looked up to see Derek giving me a visit.

“So stubborn” he spoke “Just like her father”.

“Give up already” he spoke as he eyes my condition.

“I would like to die, its better than joining you. You are the real Terrorists” I spoke, my throat burning for water.

“Fine! I guess your little sister will join us then when she grows up” he spoke and his statement made me sit up.

“Sister? Nancy?” I spoke and he smirked nodding.

“She is alive?” I asked shocked

“Yes she is” he replied rolling his eyes.

“No! You are lying” I replied and got up on my feet using the wall for support.

“She was burned badly but my man saved her and brought her to me. So now she will join the agency when she grows up” he spoke arrogantly.

“No No please let me meet her” I spoke pleading him to let me meet her. I got a reason to live for my sister.

“Nope” he smirked.

“Please let me meet her please I bet you” I begged.

“What will I get?” He questioned and closed his mouth acting as if he was thinking.

“Yes I know” he spoke “Nothing”.

“Ryan is working for me now and he doesn’t even know you two are alive. I have transferred him to another city. All I need is to call him and he will come running back” he stopped and then continued “Do you know why he will come back?”

I kept quiet listening to him. My heartbeat was rising every time he spoke like that.

“Of course to kill you” he finished and tears rolled down my eyes feeling helpless.

“Let me call him” he spoke and took out his phone.

“No!” I snapped

“No please no” I pleaded

“I will do as you say please I will do it” I gave up finally and slide down against the wall crying helpless.

“Very well then” he smiled satisfied.

“You can meet your sister. You have to train and don’t worry about your education. You will be homeschooled now. This is going to be your home from now on. You will be trained and you are going to work for me” he spoke and I kept my mouth shut listening to him.

“And also I will keep this as a secret from your so-called brother that you are alive” he spoke and eyes me once and I nodded signaling him that I heard everything and agree to it.

But this wasn’t what I planned.

This was a beginning now.

Beginning of Revenge.

Ryan Brookes and Derek Williams I am going to Kill you. You will meet your end soon. Very soon. This is my promise. I am going to destroy everything.

This is a promise from Aderyn Brookes to her parents.

“Soon” I muttered as I felt a new energy burning inside me and my blood filling with venom and thirst of Revenge.

******

Chapter 27

4 years later

19 years old Aderyn

I combed my hair and made it a braid and tied my brown hair which reached my back with a band and used hair clips to set my hair. I looked at myself in the mirror. Everything has changed. I was no longer the same Aderyn. I was changed and all grown up.

I will be turning twenty next month and how badly I wished my family to be with me. But I am not alone any longer. Nancy is with me. She will turn six years old after two months. She is my only family.

I looked at myself in the mirror. I as dressed in a black tank top and above of it a black jacket with Black jeans. I just loved black. I walked out of my room and checked the time to see it's already noon.

Nancy is in hostel. I had no other choice but to keep her there. I had been killing people not willingly but by force and I didn't want Nancy to be a part of all this. I am still burning with revenge whenever I meet Derek, images of parents comes rushing into my mind. Today is the day when I will be destroying him forever.

I knocked in his door and entered the room when I got the permission. I want to the couch and directly sat on it waiting for him to finish his call.

"Flame" he eyed me as he ended his conversation. My name has been changed by the agency and I'm basically known for my ruthless ways of killing people. Whenever I am done, I would burn there bodies or their houses for no evidence.

"What is it?" I asked arrogantly and he rolled his eyes.

"Always arrogant. Get on your job. Take this" I threw a file on me as usual. The file contained every information about my work.

Today is the day I've been waiting my whole life. Today is the day when I was going to destroy him.

I nodded and got out of his room with the file still in my hand. As I walked through building I saw James holding a girl probably of fourteen to fifteen years old in his arms and he walked towards the Cellar while the girl was unconscious in his arms.

“Don’t worry girl I will save you” I muttered as I walked towards the basement and took the keys of my car from the person who was sitting on the counter. I showed him my file and he stamped on it and gave me the car keys.

We were only allowed to go out of the building whenever we were allotted for a work. There was a Chip stuck to every agent or shall I say Assassin to trace their location. So nobody could ever go against the agency.

But I was prepared.

As soon as I reached the car, igniting the engine I drove off to the location. While driving, I pulled my tank top up and pulled out the papers that I hid behind me underneath my Jacket. From my shoes, I fished out a pen drive and smirked keeping it on the papers.

“You are going down Derek” I spoke to myself and smiled with victory.

I have been secretly and cunningly collecting information against Derek. The pen drive contains all his illegal works which I stole from his Computer data secretively.

All I have to do now is to handle all this to the Police. I have a friend in Police who knew everything about me and the agency. He was the one who asked me to collect information against him and today was the day when I was going to do everything as I planned.

I parked my Car before the house where I was suppose to kill my target.

I took the gun and knife and walked in. The front door was closed but I opened it easily using my technique and walked in. The room was dark and I thought no one was there.

“Hands up” I stood dead on my track as the lights lit on and a man stood near the doorway pointing his gun at me.

I raised my eyebrow at him and took few steps towards him. I could see him Gulping. I was famous to my killing ways. I did not fear death. It was not possible for anyone to scare me.

“Put the Gun down Idiot” I muttered and rolled my eyes at Theo.

He smiled sheepishly and pulled his hands back.

“Geez! I thought I could scare you” he rubbed the back of his neck.

Theo was the Cop who was my friend who was going to help me against Derek. As I couldn’t go anywhere, we formed a plan for which Theo needed to change his identity and become our Agency’s new target and we made sure that I was the one who should get him as a target and for that we had to kill the other Assassins who were sent by Derek for Theo.

“The files are in the car” I spoke icily as I sat on a couch.

“I will take care of it from now on. A will inform the department for a Raid” he informed me as he got on his job calling his department.

“Leave Derek for me Theo. I want to destroy him by my own hands” I spoke sternly and with hatred.

“Listen Flame this isn’t possible. He will be in our custody and he can’t kill any more people now. I promise I will make sure to make his life a living hell” Theo tried to justify and I nodded.

“Don’t worry we will save the victims an you will not be involved in this case as I have promise you earlier” he spoke and I nodded.

He gave me a last glance and made his way out of the room.

I waited for two to three hours in that house and when the time came I switched on the Tv for the news for which I was waiting.

“Breaking news!”

“A private company has been raided by the Police today and the reason for the raid is shocking”.

“The company’s owner Mr. Derek Williams is a prime suspect for turning innocent peoples to deadly Assassins. I had been doing this work secretively for twenty years now. He had killed many innocent people and had been doing this shocking tragedy with human kind for years now”.

“Destroyed” I spoke as I watched the news feeling satisfied. I watched as he was arrested by the police and he walked out of the building trying to hide his face from the camera.

“Destroyed” I screamed throwing the remote.

“Derek Williams you are destroyed” I laughed as tears rolled down my cheeks.

My revenge was now complete.

I bandaged my hand as blood oozed out of my arms.

I had to use a knife to get rid of that chip which was stuck inside my body.

I sighed in contentment.

It’s been two months now. After the incidence with Derek, I went to the building and took my things with me. But I did burn the building down avoiding the fact that it was still under police care.

I just wanted my revenge and it was done. Flame got her revenge.

“Revenge is Bad Mr. Williams” I spoke with hatred as I remembered his words when I met him for the first time.

It was now the time for Ryan.

I have been after him since a month and according to a file which I got in Derek’s building he is three to four towns away.

I switched the lights off waiting for my target. The Blonde girl whom I met half naked in Ryan’s house whimpered because of the her odd position.

I found him. I found him living in an apartment. When I reached here it was evening and I found this Blonde girl in his bedroom half naked. Probably someone whom he screwed.

She tried to hit me when I barged in. So I had to show her her real place. I tied her hands backward and tied her legs and gagged her. She is now lying on the floor wearing her lingerie crying and thrashing to free herself.

I sat on the recliner as I waited for him. It was dark and I like it that way.

Finally waiting for hours, I heard the front door open and close.

“Brother is home” I smirked and rotated the gun from its Barrel.

The Blonde whimpered seeing the gun in fear and I smirked at her.

“Thank God that the Whore has left” I heard him speaking in the dark and I smirked even more when the blonde widened her eyes shocked.

The moment he came in his bedroom I spoke “Well Well look who is here!” and I marked as the figure stopped in its track. It ran to the switch board and switched on the lights.

“A-Aderyn?” He stood shocked there as I eyed him with hatred.

“Hello to you too Big Brother” I spoke sarcastically rolling my eyes at him. He looked different. He was no longer muscular. He looked thin now with beard in his face and dark circles.

“Y-You are Aderyn right?” He asked again as he took a step towards me.

I pointed my Gun towards him which caused him to stop.

“Yes I am Aderyn duh” I spoke sarcastically.

I untied the Blonde and without wasting any more minutes at ran out of the apartment only in her lingerie.

“You are alive?” He asked again not believing his own eyes.

“Why are you not happy seeing me alive?” I asked innocently.

“I am happy Aderyn. I can’t believe this” he spoke as he smiled at me.

“You are so grown up now” he spoke and tried to take a step towards me but I pointed the gun at him warning him.

“What are you doing with that gun? Leave it Adie it’s not a toy” he spoke as he tried to take a step.

I pulled the trigger and shot him in his right leg causing him to wince in pain and kneel down before.

“Aderyn!” He screamed as he held his leg crying.

“You know brother I wanted to hear this from a long time. You can’t understand the happiness I am getting hearing your screaming and wincing” I spoke icily.

“What do you mean?” He asked as tears rolled down his cheeks.

“It means it the day when you are going to end your life. Dear Brother” I spat and smirked seeing his eyes widened.

“You want to kill me?” He asked not believing it.

“Isn’t it obvious?” I asked eyeing his leg.

“But w-why?” He had the audacity to ask.

“Why?” I questioned raising my eyebrow.

“Why?” I spat with hatred “because I we revenge. You killed my parents” I snapped and got up from my seat kicking him on his pain.

“Aderyn!” He cried as he fell down on the floor.

“You k-knew?” He asked and I knealt beside him “I saw everything” I spoke slowly enunciating each words.

“I am so sorry Aderyn. I was just blinded with revenge. I felt so guilty killing my own family that I couldn’t sleep in nights. I tried to kill myself multiple times. Please forgive me baby girl” he cried.

“I help will help you taking your life Ryan. Don’t worry I am expert on this. Thanks to you actually. You are the one who made me like this. I was taken by the Agency and was turned into an Assassin who knew only to take lives” I told him as his eyes widened.

“Y-You are an Assassin?” He questioned still wincing.

“Correction! I was. I destroyed Derek as I am now going to do the same with you” I pointed my Gun on his forehead as I eyed him with hatred.

“I am sorry. This is all my fault. I shouldn’t have done this. I killed my own family who gave me love and cared for me. I killed my sisters” he cried and I remove the fun from his head.

“Oh and by the way I am not the only one alive. Nancy is alive too” I spoke and he widened his eyes.

“My princess is a-alive?” He asked and I nodded smirking.

“This is our Revenge for killing our family” I pointed my gun at him.

“It was my family too” he spoke and I punched him on his face causing him since in pain and cough out blood.

“No it was just OUR Family. You are an outsider. You are nobody to us because you are a murderer” I screamed holding his hair.

“I am so sorry Aderyn” he cried.

I pointed my Gun at him and he closed his eyes waiting for me to pull the trigger. I wanted to kill him. I wanted to take revenge on him. I pulled the trigger and we heard a loud him shot but I didn’t direct it towards him. It was towards the ceiling.

He opened his eyes and looked at me shocked.

“No matter how much I try I can’t kill you. Ever” I cried as I sat next to him taking his head on my lap.

“You destroyed everything Ryan. You are the worst Brother in this world” I cried as I ran my fingers between his hair.

“Aderyn I regret even thinking to do that. I know I am cheap and I don’t deserve to be called as a brother. I am the worst Brother” he cried and I kept the gun near his head.

“But it’s true that I hate you. I can’t kill you but yet I want revenge” I told him as I kept his head on the floor and got up.

“You are the worst but it’s true that you were the best too” I cried and wiped my tears away angrily.

“Forgive me Adie” he cried holding my leg.

“I can never forgive what you did Ryan. I truly hate you” I told him as I walked out of his bedroom slowly but stopped near the entrance.

“It is upon you now what you want to do” I spoke as I walked like a dead human out of his apartment. I heard a fun shot and I watched as the guards ran towards his apartment hearing the gun shot pushing me while the running.

It was all needed to break me. I fell on my knees and cried screaming.

“Why did you do that Ryan? Why?” I screamed crying louder.

Soon after Ryan was gone, it’s been a month now and I found that Nancy had Blood cancer. She was diagnosed with Blood Cancer when she puked blood in her hostel.

“My life is a curse” I cried as I touched her face. She was sleeping in the hospital bed as machines were attached to her body.

She fluttered her eyes open as she looked at me with worried eyes.

“Adie” she spoke slowly.

“I am here princess” I spoke softly as I missed her forehead.

I had to earn money and for that I was forced to go back to bring Flame. No, I didn’t kill people any more but I participated in street fighting earning money. It was illegal but the amount was huge. I needed money to pay Nancy’s hospital bill. I wanted to save her. She was my only family and for that I accepted being Flame.

No company gave a job to a undergraduate girl. I was talented but I didn’t have any degree. I was helpless.

It was time for a match now and for that I needed to leave Nancy alone in the Hospital.

“I have to go now Princess” I spoke as I kissed her palm lightly.

“I don’t want you to go. Please don’t go. I’m scared” she cried holding my hand.

I looked into her eyes and held her close to me, gently kissing her on her forehead. I promised I would be back soon.

“Don’t cry, Sissie is going for important work stuff” I told once she started to cry.

She stopped crying and with her Little hands, she held my face and sobbed.

“OK go then,I will wait for you.”

“Good girl” I told her.

I kissed her again and went out of the Cancer ward.

It has been a five months now and yet there is no improvement in her body. The doctors have started to give up on her but I was stubborn. I knew nothing would happen to her.

“Nancy look I have brought your favorite pasta” I spoke happily as I kept the lunchbox on the table.

She was sleeping. So, I went to her and shooked her but she didn’t open her eyes. She looked pale and thin.

“Nancy wake up” I called as I shooked her more.

I punched the switch calling the nurse.

“Nancy please wake up” I called her again but this feeling my heart beat rising. I was panicking now.

The doctor and the nurse barged in and pushed me aside and began to do their work.

They checked her pulse and I noticed the machine which was dead.

“We are sorry Miss Brookes” the doctor spoke as he gave me a sympathetic look and stood aside.

“W-What? What are you sorry for? Nothing he happens to Nancy. She is strong. She will wake up now just wait. You will see” I spoke as I pushed the nurse who was holding me and went to Nancy.

“Nancy please open your eyes”

“You can’t leave me Nancy”

“Please”

“Please God you can’t do this to me”

“Plead Nancy wake up” I cried shaking her.

I took her in my arms and kept my head on her face.

“You can’t leave me princess. We were family” I cried holding her tight.

I stood their holding her in my arms for some minutes disagreeing to the fact that she was gone.

After some minutes when it started to register in my mind, finally I broke down. It was the ugly truth that Nancy was no longer with me. She was gone forever and ever. I couldn’t save her.

I watched the scene which was playing before me and I knew I was crying remembering those moments. Those were the worst moments of my life but were the ugly truth.

I looked at another scene where I was standing at the edge of the bridge looking dead and broken. I was trying to kill myself. But I couldn't. No matter how much I tried I couldn't. It was just too much for a twenty year old girl. I was human after all.

I snapped out of the scene as I heard someone calling me.

It was turning dark again and I found myself again in darkness as I began to hear someone calling for me.

"Aderyn!"

"Aderyn follow my voice Aderyn"

"Aderyn!"

And as I followed the voice, I began to recognize who it was.

Dylan.

******

Chapter 28

Dylan Pov

I watched as Julie checked Aderyn and made me out of the room for changing her clothes. My wolf was pacing around panicking. He wanted to see Aderyn awake.

“What is wrong with her?” I asked getting restless to Julie.

She heaved a sigh and pursed her lips.

“I have given her the injection and changed her to something comfortable. She should be fine now” she told me but she looked unsure of what she was speaking.

“What’s with your behavior?” I asked sternly.

“We are werewolves, Alpha. We can heal really fast when we are hurt compared to a human. Aderyn is Human. Her wounds will heal with time but not her soul” she told me and her statement made me attentive.

“What do you mean by soul?” I asked confused.

“I also don’t know Alpha. As a doctor I tried my best and it’s already five hours since I have given her the medicines. She should’ve already responded to it but I don’t understand why she is not responding” she spoke with her professional tone.

“I don’t understand” I muttered as I went past her and entered the room where Aderyn was still not awake. She was now wearing a loose grey shirt with loose pants. She looked pale but she was breathing heavily.

“Aderyn wake up” I said as I took hold of her hand and gave it a squeeze. Her skin was cold. So, I covered her using the duvet and sat next to her on the bed feeling guilty.

“I am sorry Aderyn. It was all my fault” I spoke regretfully as I touched her face trailing my fingers on her eyebrow.

“Please wake up” I even begged.

“Sometimes brain do not listen to our commands” I heard someone speak and I turned around to find Estelle near the door.

“Estelle!” I spoke turning to face her still on the bed.

“Our brain has the capability to shut us down when we are in pain. It has the capability to lock us in our past moments making us shut down from the world” She spoke as she came near me.

“What do you mean?” I asked confused.

She looked at Aderyn and walked near her. She closed her eyes and changed something moving her lips. When she opened her eyes, her eyes were now glowing and she placed her hand on Aderyn’s forehead closing her eyes again. She stood like that for some minutes and I began to grow restless.

She jerked away her hand from Aderyn and opened her eyes. Her eyes came back to her normal form but what got my attention was her teary eyes.

“What is it?” I asked growing inpatient.

“You told me that you can’t read Aderyn’s thought and mind right?” She asked and I nodded confused on where this was going.

“When we are broken, alone we shut down ourselves from the world. But with this, we build a capability to control somewhat thoughts of our brain. Humans do not have such capability but only some special werewolves has this ability to control their thoughts. Aderyn is our Luna. She is a human but being the Luna to a werewolf king gives her power. When she doesn’t want any one to know her she controls her brain acting normal on a situation but in reality she panics” she filled me with the information as I tried to understand everything.

“She is a reservative human but for now she is stuck. Her brain is not listening to her commands and has chose to shut down. She is literally stuck inside her brain in some moments of her past” Estelle told me as she gave me a sad expression.

“What do you mean?” I asked

“This means she can’t control her body now. Her brain is controlling her now. She is stuck and being her mate you could make her come back to senses”.

“It would’ve been more simpler if you would’ve marked her at the first place. You could’ve easily read her mind and even know about her. But seeing the fact that you didn’t mark her you could still help in waking her up”.

“And how am I going to do that?” I asked as I got up from the bed.

“I will spell a magic which will break the barrier of her mind. You could enter her mind using your mate bond and look through her past. You will get to know her and after that you need to search for her and call her towards you. Ask her to follow your voice and she will be back” Estelle replied as she looked back at Aderyn.

“Why are looking sad?” I asked

“You will know soon” she told me and closed her eyes chanting something.

“Is everything alright?” I heard Cole speak to me through the mind link.

“Yes everything is alright” I spoke and was just about to ask something when Estelle signaled me to touch Aderyn’s forehead. I hesitated thinking that Aderyn will get angry later on if she finds about this but my wolf wanted her back, awake and so did I. So, I kept my hand on her forehead while Estelle chanted something.

Like someone pulled me I found myself getting pulled somewhere and all I could hear was Estelle’s Chanting.

Everything was dark and black. I looked around to find nothing.

“I am breaking the barrier now” I heard Estelle speaking.

I waited for her and soon the darkness changed into a white ball and I found myself getting somewhere. I looked around myself and saw that I was somewhere. It looked different. Everything looked Vintage and old.

I looked around when I heard someone giggling. I saw a kid who was wearing a Dungaree and a guy may be fourteen to fifteen years old playing in front of a house. They were throwing water balloons at each other laughing and smiling.

In no time I knew the girl as Aderyn. That small girl was Aderyn. She was laughing and throwing balloons at whom I think as her brother.

“Enough Kids you will catch cold” I heard a woman speaking and she came out of the house holding something in her hand. She was pregnant and she looked same as Aderyn.

“Mom!” Both of the kids shouted as they ran towards her.

“Ryan! Aderyn! You both are soaked” she yelled horrified looking at them while both of them laughed.

I felt kind of jealous seeing them. I never had such thing with my family. I could never play like a kid instead I had to learn using weapons when I was of their age.

I knew it that someone like Aderyn could never understand me.

The scene before me began to change I saw a man fishing and beside him a girl was sitting who was now maybe ten to twelve old years old. It was Aderyn now grown up.

They were looking happy as they were chatting and something splashing water at each other leaving their fish rods.

The scene before me changed and I was somewhere in a hospital now. I watched as Aderyn and her brother pacing around in the corridor while I could hear screams coming from inside the room. A nurse came out and ask the children to go in. They dashed inside and I found myself inside too.

There stood the whole family. Aderyn's mother holding a baby while her father standing beside her looking happy. Aderyn was trying to touch the baby while Ryan was smiling at them.

I sighed and again everything began to change. I found myself again near there house. Aderyn and Ryan were fighting with each other. And finally I saw them being happy and they posed together for a family picture. A saw a little girl too. Probably her sister.

The scene changed again and I don't why I became to grow restless. I was feeling suffocated now. Probably seeing her happy made me guilty. I could never give her such life. I was worthless.

The scene changed and I found myself standing inside a house near a staircase. It was dark outside. A saw a man and Aderyn's parent fighting. That man Ryan. He was grown up now. I heard everything that they were speaking. I found out Ryan wasn't their real blood and he wanted to kill them now. As I heard everything I grew more restless. What will happen if Aderyn find outs about this?

And as if someone heard me I looked up at the staircase to find Aderyn standing near the window looking sad. She was crying sadly. She overheard everything. Oh no!

I looked back to see Ryan leaving the house. Her parents were crying and there was something a box like structure on the sofa. Her mother saw it and reached for it. Her father tried to stop her but as soon as an touched it, a loud blast with a ball of fire erupted going through me but nothing happened to me. I looked towards the staircase to see her flying out of the window.

"Aderyn!" I screamed.

My eyes were widened. I never knew that something like this happened in her life. She lost her parents.

I wanted to go outside but the scene began to change.

"No! No! Wait. Aderyn!" I tried to call.

The scene changed and I found Aderyn on a hospital bed crying silently. She has a plastered hand and bandages everywhere. She was crying and I felt immense pain inside my chest seeing her in pain. She got up from the bed and walked out of the room. I was following her. She took a Cab after some minutes of waiting and reached her home which was now a debris.

I saw her kneeling down and crying. I couldn't do anything but to watch her. I saw a man coming from her behind and he took hold of Aderyn and made her smell chloroform and took her somewhere.

I was confused now. What is this all going on in Aderyn's life?

The scene changed where I found myself in an office. Aderyn was being hold by someone while she screamed "You all are terrorists" at the man. I got to know everything.

Then I watched as Aderyn was whipped which explains the marks in her back. She was kept without food for some days and that man whose name was Derek, blackmailed her and at finally gave up.

I was feeling devastated now. I was feeling her pain. Whenever she cried my heart ached.

The scene began to change and I saw a grown up Aderyn. She was tall and looked cold. She didn't smile anymore. I saw her killing people. It was her work. I saw her taking revenge. She destroyed Derek. She was planning everything from the beginning. I felt proud for her. She was so strong. She didn't let herself feel weak even after so much torture.

I saw her confronting Ryan. Ryan killed himself using the Gun which she left their.

Her family was destroying. She was alone now. What was destiny had with her? She even lost her sister. My heart ached seeing her holding her sister's dead body in her arms crying and pleading the doctors to do something. She did everything to do to save her sister. She worked hard, fought with strong even the bigger size of man to win money prize for her sister treatment.

I found my eyes getting watery. It's been a long time since I cried even get emotional. I can't believe that Aderyn went through so much. I always knew her smiling face was a facade but never did I imagine this to be that bad. Hell it's worst.

She was keeping so many secrets inside her. She was filled with darkness. She was my inspiration now. I was pushing her away from me all the time. If only I knew. My pain was nothing before her.

I was standing near a bridge now. I looked around panicked thinking what worst I was going to witness now.

There I saw a girl drinking alcohol from a bottle. She couldn't even stand straight. It was Aderyn.

She was drunk and I could see her face masked with sadness. She was cursing loudly as she leaned against the railing. She threw the bottle to the water and made her way towards the edge where she stood on the railing supporting herself but failing miserably.

Oh no! She was planning to suicide. She cannot do that.

“Aderyn no!” I screamed but I knew she couldn’t hear me yet I couldn’t stop myself from talking to her.

“Aderyn you are not weak. You can’t do this to yourself” I screamed and as if she heard me she stopped moving. Her feet hanging on the edge of the bridge.

“You are not alone Aderyn. We all are there for you Aderyn. Please don’t do this. This is not a right choice. I am there for you” I told her and my eyes widened realizing what I just said to her.

Everything began to turn dark and I was suddenly pulled backwards. I heard Estelle again chanting something.

“Call her Alpha!” She told me and I did what she asked me to do.

“Aderyn!”

“Aderyn listen to me”

“You need to get out Aderyn”

“Aderyn follow my voice”

“Aderyn!” I began to call her and I was suddenly pulled out.

I huffed out air and I looked around frantically to find myself back in my the room. I removed my hand from Aderyn’s forehead and looked down her to see her breathing normally now. She was back but still sleeping.

“My work is done over here” I heard Estelle’s voice in thin air as she faded away bowing.

She was gone.

“King!” I heard Cole and turned around to see his eyes watery. Beside him, Bell was crying terribly not able to control herself.

“We all everything that you saw Alpha. Your mind link was open” Cole spoke and then I understood. I forgot to close the mind link while talking to Cole. That means all of the People knew everything about Aderyn now.

Damn!

“Its okay we will not judge her King” Bell spoke between her sobs.

“She is still our Luna. Our Strong Luna. She deserves to be our Luna” Blake spoke as he looked sad. It was the first time he was not in his cheery self.

I saw Lily. She looked sad nevertheless she glanced at Aderyn for the last time and turned back going away somewhere.

I turned back to Aderyn and sat next to her.

“Forgive me Aderyn” I spoke and got up from the bed making my way out of her room.

*****

Chapter 29

Aderyn Pov

As I began to regain consciousness, I began to sense everything beside me. I was slowly waking up and finally my eyes fluttered open and I looked towards my surrounding. It was my room. I stared blankly at the ceiling for some minutes, then I tried to get up from the bed.

As soon as I did that I felt uneasiness and my heart beat began to rise. I groaned as I held my throbbing head and managed to lean against the headboard. As I sat there for minutes, I began to steady myself down a bit.

I heaved a sigh and looked at my clothes. It wasn't the same that I was wearing the last time. I wonder who got me here and changed my clothes.

I remember last time I was in the woods, drenching under the rain.

Suddenly, the door of my room opened and Bell walked in with a smiling face holding a tray.

"Hey!" She said softly as she stopped before me and sat beside me on the bed.

"Hi!" I manage to reply with my hoarse voice.

"How are you feeling now?"

"Fine I guess" I told her with a smile of my own.

"Here, have some coffee you feel more better" she gave me the cup of coffee from the tray and I took it feeling grateful. I really needed it.

"Thanks!"

"Your welcome" she smiled as she got up from the bed and made her way towards the door.

"You can come down for breakfast right?" She asked from the entrance.

"Hmm? Oh yeah I will" I replied to which she nodded and left.

After I completed my coffee, I got up from the bed and went inside the bathroom.

"What the-" I screamed shocked looking at myself in the mirror. My hair was a mess. I saw a twig stuck inside my hair and I took out with difficulty and eyed it in my hand.

"Thank God no bird saw me or it might have mistaken my hair as it's nest" I laughed softly and threw the twig into the dustbin.

I took a shower and I had to shampoo my hair again. After I was done I walked out wearing my bathrobe and wrapped my hair up into a towel. When my hair was dry, I combed it into a ponytail and wore my white button up shirt and black fit jeans. I wore my sneakers and took that coffee cup which I left on the table in the morning and went downstairs.

I was somehow in a good mood today.

“Hey Jenny” I chirped seeing Jenny in the Kitchen preparing food.

“Adie! How are you feeling?” She asked leaving her work and walking towards me with a worried expression.

I furrowed my eyebrows in confusion seeing her expression.

“I am feeling Fresh” I said as I kept the cup on the table.

“Oh Thank God Adie!” She whispered heaving a sigh as she held me by my arms.

“I was really worried for you” she said as she smiled softly at me.

“Okay? Uh I am hungry” I told her and she nodded serving me my plate of pancakes.

“Smells so good” I moaned smelling its aroma as I sat on the chair feeling my stomach growl.

“I hope you like it” she said as she began to do her other work.

I took a fork and a knife and began to eat my pancakes. It was delicious.

“Hey! Adie” I looked up to see Cole entering the room with Lily following him.

For the first time, I saw Lily wearing decent clothes. She was wearing a black with lace sleeves top and blue jeans with black boots. Her hair was down and she used minimum make up.

“What is wrong with her?” I wondered.

“Hi Cole” I replied as he took a seat next to me. Lily sat on the chair before me and gave me a small smile to which I gave her a confused expression. She rolled her eyes and asked Jenny to serve her breakfast.

Jenny took a plate and served Lily’s breakfast in it and kept it before her. Lily took her fork and knife and began to eat her breakfast.

“So how are you feeling now?” Cole asked as he turned towards me on his chair facing me.

I ate my pancake and shrugged my shoulder. “Good!” I said with my mouth full of pancake.

He smiled at my action and nodded whispering “That’s good”.

I furrowed my eyebrows thinking what's wrong with all of them. Why are they behaving like this?

"Why are all behaving like this?" I asked as I stuffed a piece of pancake into my mouth.

"Huh?" Cole asked "like what?"

"Uh like this I mean why are you off asking about how I am feeling all of a sudden? Why so much worriedness?" I questioned.

"Nothing we are ju-" Cole was cut off by Lily who answered "Simple! They all are feeling pity for you because of your terrible past" she finished as I stopped eating, my spoon in mid air.

"What?" I questioned raising my eyebrow.

"Lily!" Cole hissed to which Jenny tried to interfere "N-Nothing Adie we we-" Jenny was again cut off by Lily "Oh c'mon guys you can't hide it from her any longer. We all know about her past and we even know what happened with her family, her parents, her brother and even her sister" she finished as she looked at me with a neutral expression.

"We even know what you are and how you became that" she finished.

"Enough Lily!" Cole banged his fists on the table.

"Can't you keep your mouth quiet you fool" Jenny hissed at her.

"How?" I asked as confusion and anxiety began to fill within me.

"King! He d-" before she can complete her sentence I was already up on my feet walking away like a maniac.

Rate was filled inside me and the only thing I felt right now was hatred. Hatred for Dylan. How dare he? I couldn't believe this.

I could hear Cole and Jenny calling for me and Cole shouting at Lily "Are you happy now?"

I was angry as well as hurt. How could he? I hated those who has pity upon me.

My rage was making me blind as it began to roll down my cheeks in form of tears. I felt as if I am betrayed.

I walked directly towards his room. Without knocking I barged into his room only to find it empty.

"Office" I thought as I exited his room and made my way towards his office. He has to give me answers today.

As I reached near his office I saw people whoever passed me, gave me a sympathetic look. This enraged me even more. This was the thing I loathed the most in this world.

I barged into his Office room without knocking. He was not alone. He was sitting on his chair and before him Blake was sitting on the chair while a bald guy was sitting next to him.

"Out" I said to both of the men. They looked shocked but looked back at Dylan to which he nodded and they both got up from their seat and left the room without uttering any word.

"Why?" I asked as I walked towards his desk slowly.

He got up from his chair and walked towards me.

"Why?" I asked more loudly and clearly, anger evident in my voice.

"You are awake" he said ignoring my question as he reached his hand to touch my face.

I moved back from his touch and immediately his face was masked with hurt. I somehow felt guilty for it but soon shrugged it off and concentrated on the topic.

"Answer me just why?"

"What are you talking about Aderyn?" He asked softly and I was shocked hearing him talk to me softly.

"What I am talking about? Oh so you don't know?" I asked as I crossed my arms across my chest.

"How dare you let people know about my past" his eyes widened and he opened his mouth to speak but I cut him off "Do you think this is an interesting story or Cinema that you can tell people? Huh? So why did you do that?" I asked as I shoved his chest once.

"Aderyn list-" he began but was cut off by me "No you listen to me. How dare you talking about my past publicly? What did you get doing that?"

Then realization hit me "Oh now I get it" I said as I laughed sarcastically at him. "This is your way of revenge right?" I finished

"Aderyn what are you talking about?" He tried to touch me but I slapped his hand angrily.

"Don't ever touch me" I snarled angrily enunciating each words.

"Let me explain" he pleaded

"Explain? You will explain? You got so angry upon me when you knew that I found out about your past right? And why did you did you get angry?" I questioned mocking him.

I answered my own question "Because you hate it when people pity you, have sympathy upon you. You hate your past and do not want people to know about and that goes same for me. I hate I too so how dare you?"

"This is your way how you took your revenge right?" I asked as my voice lowered down and years began to roll down my cheeks and I turned around.

"Aderyn please" Dylan said softly as he touched my shoulder trying to turn me but it was his bad move because as he did that he fueled my anger even more which caused me to slap him on his face hard.

"I said Do Not Touch Me" I hissed.

"You know what? You were right. You were so right when you said that I was weak. Because you are right I am weak and I do not regret showing it to others and at least I am not like you all fake. I do not keep my emotions inside me. You are a very selfish man Mr Dylan Black Bishop. Very selfish!"

"And you know what? I just hate you" as I said that his eyes grew wider and he stared at me in shock.

"That's right I just hate you" I said in a low voice.

"You know what I just hate you. Every single thing of yours. Your face. Your eyes. Everything" I screamed at him showing him a accusing finger.

"I feel pity for you actually. It is very sad to know that you do not respect anyone. For you everything is I, me and myself. So selfish. You can only thing about yourself but what about others you fool?" I questioned.

As he kept on staring me I kept quiet for a few second waiting for him to say something but when he didn't I wiped away my tears and composed myself and in a normal tone I continued "I have had enough. This is just too much" I inhaled deeply and closed my eyes.

Opening them, I spoke "I am going to do what you asked me to last night and I think that will be better for both of us. For you" I said pointing a finger towards him "and as well as me" I completed pointing a finger towards myself.

With that I gave him a last glance before turning around and walking out of his room. I knew whatever I planned to do right now was good for both us.

And nobody can stop me from doing that.

Not even Dylan himself.

******

Chapter 30

Aderyn Pov

Storming back into my room, I banged the door shut and slid against it leaning my head against the door sobbing loudly. My emotions were visible through my tears and what I felt the most at that time was hurt.

I was just a piece of joke for them. They must be thinking me as a misfortune.

Actually this is true. I am bloody misfortune for everyone. I should just go away from their life. I could never give any kind of happiness to them.

A small smile broke into my lips as I began to reminiscent the days I spent here. How much fun we did together. How Blake became my closest friend and Bell became my best friend. For the first time ever in my life, I was so happy. At least for the sake of their happiness I need to take this step.

What is the difference actually?

I would've have left someday, so what is the difference if I leave today?

I am sure nobody will miss me and Dylan he would be very happy. This was what he wanted after all. He clearly told me to leave last night and me, being a selfish chose to ignore his words thinking that he must be angry that's why he spoke like that to me. It was his anger who was speaking to me.

But I forgot. Anger lets people's emotion and feelings out. And Dylan clearly wants me to leave and I will just fullfill what he wants.

I wiped away the tears using my sleeves and got up from the floor. I went to my walk in closet and took out my back pack which I brought with me when I came here.

Quickly, I stuffed my clothes and got hold of my photo frame. I couldn't control my emotions when I looked at my happy family photo.

"I terribly miss you Mom and Dad. I wish you were here with me" I whispered as I placed a kiss on the frame and held it tightly against my chest sobbing for a while.

Finally, I composed myself and put it inside my bag.

"It is time to leave Adie" I talked to myself as I stared at myself in the mirror.

I brushed my hair and made it into a French pleat. I washed my face with cold water and wiped away my face with a towel.

I wanted to bid goodbye to all of them. I so badly wanted to but I knew it will be not right.

Instead, I chose an old way. I took took piece of paper and a pen and began to write what I felt.

My dear friends,

By the time you all get this, I will be far away from you all. I know I couldn't even bid a proper goodbye to all but I was really in a critical situation for which I needed to leave immediately without even informing you all. I know you all are already knowing a lot about me, but trust me the days which I spent here is the most beautiful and awesome days of my life. I never had a family who would care for me nor a proper friend who would help me in my difficulties but you all gave me all that just in this short period of time.

I don't know if I would be ever coming back but I hope every for you all to get every happiness you all deserve. If we ever meet in the future, I hope you would always welcome me a warm hug and with a smile on your face because this is how Aderyn Brookes like greeting people. I will really miss you all and I can never forget you all ever in my life. I will be really missing you more Bell.

Aderyn

I gave it a reading and it looked more like a formal letter. But I didn't have time to clarify the mistakes so I folded it and kept it on the night stand, under a photo frame where anyone could notice it easily.

I stood up from the bed and took out a piece of note from the front chain of the bag. It was the note which I made remembering the number I counted for the route. I took the pen and began to draw a line according to the number. Finally, I had map to get out of the place. But the thing is I need to go exactly as it is in the paper. I can't take any shortcut else I will be definitely lost.

Carrying my things, I walked out of the room but not before checking if the coast was clear or not. I walked as it was in the paper counting the numbers of my heartbeat. Thankfully, I was able to walk exactly out of the house. It means I had counted all the numbers correctly.

I went to the big garage and looked for my blush. My hands ached to touch her. It's a long time since I last drove her. Finally, I spotted her in the corner.

"Blush baby!" I squealed running to it.

I placed a kiss on its hood feeling contented. She looked beautiful. She was actually polished again and she was shining.

"Blake" I muttered knowing that he must be the one who took care of her. I felt very sad that I couldn't even hug him for the last time.

I saw my keys hanging in the wall and took it jumping into Blush. I ignited the engine and blush roared to life just in a start.

“Woah!” I found myself impressed by Blake’s work.

Putting the gear in reverse, I had to drive backwards a little for getting some space then finally, I drove off to the exit. As I drove near the gate, I knew I had to face a new problem now.

“The guards” I sighed and parked my blush behind a tree near the pavement. I took a lighter out of my bag and gathered some twigs and dried leaves from nearby.

Carefully, I went to the other side of the pavement and went behind another year dumping the twigs and leaves on the ground. I lit it and began to blow in it using my mouth. Soon, it began to burn and I added some plastic bag to the fire for smoke.

“Fire!” I screamed making sure to hid myself behind the tree. I made sure to gain their attention in order to distract them from the gate.

As I had planned they noticed the smoke and ran towards it. As they ran towards it, I ran towards my blush and starting the engine I drove off towards the gate. Again I had to jump out of my car only to open the gates by myself.

Soon, I found myself on the driveway running my Blush in full speed. I am free now. I racked a hand through my loose hair and wore my glasses driving like a maniac. I took the piece of paper which helped me out of the place and crumbled it throwing it away.

I didn’t need it any longer.

I won’t be needing it again.

I sighed as I drove with a blank mind. I looked at the rear view mirror to find no one following me for which I was little happy. But beneath all this happiness the tears which were gathering at the corner of my eyes made me sad.

It’s been already been two hours since I have been driving. I knew by now that must be knowing about me. I just prayed God for their future and happiness. That’s only what I want.

But for now, I am tired of running away. I have a week in my hand for my match. So, I just want to go back to my house and rest. It’s been a while since I have been there.

So I drove back to my home. 380 Kms away from where I was now.

It took total of nine hours of continuous driving with only two breaks at some gas station for eating and gas filling, finally I reached back to my house.

The sound of sea waves filled my ears as soon as I drove on the familiar driveway. It was more like a beach house. I saw lights were switched on so I guessed the care taker must be in the house. I parked my Blush in the garage and took out my keys from my bag and walked towards the entrance.

Its already night time now. I made my way to the door and walked in opening the door using my key.

“Greta!” I called as I saw her sleeping on my recliner sofa looking tired.

She opened her eyes and gave me a surprised look but soon smiled widely at me and got up on her feet running towards me.

Greta was in her late 40's. She had an only son who is studying Law in some University day away from this place. She has been living her life alone in her cottage nearby. One day I found her walking on the beach alone. That’s was when I talked to her and came to know about each other. I was new to this place that time so I wanted someone as a care taker of my house who would take care of my house while I was away.

She happily agreed to come and stay with me and she liked my house as it was a beach house.

“Aderyn honey you are back!” She cried happily as she crushed me into a tight hug.

“Yes for a match” I replied as I pulled away from her.

“Oh not again!” She whined.

She knew everything about me and she hated my profession.

“Greta I told you its what I do for my living” I complained as I took off my coat throwing it on the sofa.

“And I have already told you you don’t need to do this you could always take my m-” I cut her off “Greta just because you are a billionaire, heiress to the well-known toy company doesn’t mean that you could waste your money on me” I complained.

She just doesn’t understand.

“You are just like my daughter Aderyn” she said with a sad tone making me feel guilty.

“And you are more to me than a mother Greta so please try to understand. It is the way how I like to live” I say on the sofa leaning against it.

She sighed and came near me sitting on the sofa next to me.

“So tell me where were you all this days?” She asked and I began to feel suffocated so I changed the topic “I will tell you everything but firstly will you give me something to eat? I am hungry” I told her and watched as her expression changed into a horror one.

“Oh my! I am so stupid. Wait! I will just make something for you immediately” she got up on her feet and ran towards the Kitchen. I chuckled at her expression as I leaned back against the sofa my mind rewinding back to the days were I spent the most amazing days of my life.

“Werewolves” I smiled still not being to believe it that supernatural beings exists.

****

Chapter 31

Dylan Pov

For the umpteenth time of the day I am reading the letter that she wrote for the people she care. But what just the most, was the fact that she didn't write anything about me.

She is gone.

She is gone is what I know. Bell came to me with this letter with a crying face telling me that Aderyn was no longer in the room. She left and left this letter for the people to let them know that she was gone.

It was all because of my stupid mistake. But now, when I think of it, it's actually good that she is gone. Now I don't have to distract so much and it's better for her. She will eventually forget about us. About me.

Then she could be able to live a life which she deserves. I am no good for her. She had already suffered a lot and I don't want to add more to her plate. I am sure that she will find a guy who will take care of her, more than her and will protect her and will cherish her with happiness. Unlike me.

I gave nothing to her. All I did was, I added more pain to her life. She needed someone who will heal her but not me. I could never keep her happy. But the fact that she will be living her life with any other male which was not me made me angry and as well as irritated. The mate bonding was making it absolutely difficult for me to deal with all this and Black was doing no help to it.

He just wants his mate back and somewhere deep down I also wants the same.

But I know this isn't possible.

This will never be possible.

I am a werewolf king after all and she was a human.

It is really unbelievable. It is really shocking that I, Dylan Black Bishop who loathed those who were weaks and humans is feeling really proud of Aderyn a normal human who has unintentionally managed to break down the walls around my heart and sneak inside.

Whenever I think of her, immediately i feel a tingling sensation on my skin. Of course, it's the mate bond.

I can't believe that it's already four hours since I last saw her. She was angry just like fire when she came to meet me this morning. I underestimated her.

"Aderyn" I whispered to myself wishing her to be with me.

I am surprised that she managed to sneak out of my territory so easily. It's really surprising for a human to do so. But she is Aderyn. I can understand that it would've been really easy to her.

I sighed as I let my eyes roam once again on that beautiful handwriting letter.

I have to agree on one thing though.

Aderyn was strong. That slap was really strong for a woman like her. I could imagine what she must have done with her opponents.

A fierce tigress.

"King!" I heard someone calling me and I looked up towards the entrance of my office to find Blake standing with an unreadable expression.

"Blake!" I said as I folded the letter into my hand and kept inside the drawer.

"Come in! What do you want?" I asked

He walked in and stood before my desk.

"I am here to talk" he spoke again making his expression unreadable. But it was easy for me to find out what he thinking. Nothing remains hidden from me.

"I don't want to talk about it" I stated as I answered to his unasked question.

"But I want to" he argued.

"Blake!" I warned

"Why didn't you sent anyone behind her? We could have easily found her and now she would've been with us. Here" his statement startled me. It was the fact that he was arguing with me, his king startled me and as much I wanted to show him his place, I controlled myself. I understood that this concern was natural. They were just concern about their Queen.

"Because I didn't wanted to" I spoke as I got up from my place and went to the window.

"Can I know with whom am I talking to?" he questioned.

"To the King or to my childhood best friend?" he finished.

"Blake" I sighed "I am always your friend" I finished.

“Then listen to me. Whatever you are doing is wrong”

“Why are you doing this to yourself Dylan?”

“Blake please” I interfered not wanting to hear anything.

“No Dylan. You just don’t understand” he stopped and sighed closing his eyes.

“No werewolf can live without its mate and you Dylan, you are the King. How can you make such a compromise with yourself?”

“Soon or later you will be aching for your mate and then you will go violent and no one can stop you Dylan. Why don’t you understand?”

“You need her as much as we need her. Stop being so childish. I understand why you are doing this but this is not the solution”.

“I know you don’t want to add more trouble for Aderyn because she has already gone through so much but for once think of it Dylan. Why did the moon goddess choose a mate like her for you?”

“You will heal her and you can. She will also heal you Dylan. You will be the only one for each other and nobody will ever come in between you”.

I started to become restless. His words were not helping me in any sense. In fact I was growing more tense for Aderyn leaving.

“She left. It was her decision” I tried to argue.

“And you let her go?” He argued

“If I were you I would have went after her and throw her on my shoulders kidnapping her back to my place” he stated and I rolled my eyes on that. I would never do that.

“Are you not missing her ?“He asked

“No!” I said immediately.

He stopped talking but I knew he was still standing there. When he didn’t speak for more few minutes, I turned back only to find him smirking.

“What?” I snapped

“Nothing”

“No tell me”

“You don’t miss her hu?”

I kept quiet not wanting to answer him.

“You terribly miss her Dylan. Just admit that to yourself” he shoved his hands into his pant pockets.

“Dylan you really missed a great opportunity” his statement me to frown.

“What?”

“You could have got what you never get from your life” I furrowed my eyebrows hearing that.

“Family” he finished and my eyes widened.

“Don’t you want a Family to whom you want to go back after a tiring day, with whom you would laugh and enjoy, with whom you would like to go out, to feel protected towards them” he stated and somehow his statement hit directly to my heart.

“No I don’t want a Family. I already have a Family. You are all my family” I reasoned.

“Yes we are your family and I know you are understanding what I mean by” he air quoted “family”.

I turned around with a racing heart. Black wasn’t talking to me. He was like a wounded wolf sitting silently and sadly inside me. But hearing Blake he whispered “Family” sadly.

“Think of this again Dylan” Blake said as he turned around to leave.

“Sometimes being selfish is good. You need to be selfish if you want to keep something to yourself and here we are talking about Aderyn. I am sure she will get a wonderful partner who will love her and she will love her back” he spoke and his last words made me growl.

“Shut up Blake nobody touches my mate” I growled but stopped realizing what I just said.

He didn’t turn back. He gave me my privacy and left me alone in my room.

“Family” I whispered to myself.

I walked to the room where Aderyn was staying and sniffed her faint scent in the air. No matter how much I deny it, I miss her. Terribly.

I walked out of the house. I wanted to walk a little. I liked how we would walk together silently. She would always maintain her silence whenever we were walking. I liked no I loved walking with her. It gave me peace and calmness.

“Mom!” I heard a kid screaming.

Immediately I walked into the woods searching for that voice. I found a kid on the ground with a lady inspecting his leg in the meadow. The kid probably fell and wounded his leg. The lady was probably his mother.

“Daddy!” He cried and I saw a man holding a girl in his arms walking towards them. He knelt down and handed the little girl to its mother and began to inspect the kid’s leg.

Then he scooted him up into his arms making him giggle.

“Good boy” his mother cooed.

Somehow I found myself getting jealous seeing the sight before me. They were what is called a Family. A perfect family, which I never had.

Blake’s word is like a bucket of cold water thrown on me. I couldn’t argue with me because I knew he was right.

A small smile played on my lips, remembering my once happy family. My mom and dad were the best. They did what I always asked them to do. In fact, they tried to give me more than what I could ever ask.

My shoulders slumped down in defeat when I realized I could never get them back. Eventually, I lost my interest in walking and I thought to be best if I walk back to my house.

So I walked back to my house.

“House” I shooked my head. No matter how much I called it a house I always knew that it was never a proper home for me. I never felt any connection towards it until I met her.

“Aderyn”.

The fact that she was in that house made me excited and I always wanted to go back home as soon as I can only for her.

I saw food on my table but I wasn’t hungry any more. Changing my clothes, into a loose pant and vest I laid back on my bed looking at the ceiling silently.

I wonder what she must be doing right now.

I sighed as I let my eyes roam towards the window. It was already late at night. Soon, my head began to pain. It’s because of my wolf. It has been clawing my mind continuously trying to get my attention on his mate.

I huffed annoyed by the animal.

“Mate! Mate! Mate” he growled.

“Fine!” I threw the cover off me as I got up from the bed irritated.

I closed my eyes and rubbed my forehead because of the pain. Then I took a deep breathe and opened my eyes.

“It’s time to get you back” I muttered.

“Really? Yeah! Yeah! Yeahhhh” he howled in anticipation.

“Stupid Wolf” I complained with a smile as I got ready for a mission.

“Mission finding Aderyn”.

*****

Chapter 32

Aderyn Pov

“Oh! I am really relieved hearing this” I spoke in my phone as I prepared my bed.

“Yes! You better work out properly because belief me its really a big one and you will earn more than you ever thought of” George spoke from the other line.

“Alright! I have actually started on my training. Goodnight now I need to sleep” I said as I disconnected the call and kept the phone on the night stand before hoping onto the bed and covering myself with the sheet.

George was the organizer and was a friend of mine. He informed me about that match in which I will be taking part. The match which was supposed to be held on this week has been postponed to a month more. That means I got lots of time to improvise on my muscles more.

I sighed and looked at the bed side towards my alarm clock. It read 11 O’ clock in the night. I lied down on my back and closed my eyes hoping to get into sleep as soon as possible.

The beeping sound of my alarm woke me up. I was immediately on my feet aa I heard the alarm and stretch myself for getting rid of the laziness as I made my way towards my bathroom to change.

Brushing my teeth and washing my face I changed into my black camisole and black tank top with Reebok sports pant and my shoes and made my hair into a braid. I ran out of my house towards the road for a jogging. Soon, I found myself pushing myself into a run.

By the time I stopped I was panting and huffing out air as beads of sweat began to form on my forehead. But it was nothing compared to my daily workout.

I had more to do. When my breath came out in normal. I began to exercise more prominently. Crunch ups, sit ups, boxing, even weight lifting to improvise more. Currently, I have reached back to my backyard after that running session to work out using the props which I installed for my training. As there were no personal coach or trainer to guide me, I had to do this all by myself.

It’s already been two and half an hour of me practicing. I had taken several breaks in the middle to relax and then carried on my work being loyal to myself.

As I sipped my protein shake I felt as I was being watched. I turned around and looked towards the road and towards the woods across the road but found no one. Finally, I shrugged the matter off thinking I must be being paranoid.

“Aderyn come in now, its going to rain soon” Greta called for me and I nodded seeing the clouds forming in the sky.

It’s been exactly a month now. I have been practicing really hard for the match but there is feeling which keeps nagging my mind that I was being watched.

Probably, some opponent of mine thought to keep an eye on me wanting to know my moves. This was normal actually. My opponents could go to any extent to make me loose. But I am better than that. I always have a back up plan for if things could go wrong my strategy would help me survive.

But this stalking and keeping an eye thing is really cheap. It gets on my nerve and once I find out who it was, I will make sure to break every bones on his body.

Anyways I should just focus more on my match now. Today is the day.

I took a good cold shower and came out of the bathroom wearing my bathrobe. I stood before the mirror after dressing up for my day. I was wearing my track suit and sneakers. My hair was done into a French braid neatly as I hated whenever my hair fell on my face disturbing me during the fight.

I took my bag in which I had kept my fighting clothes earlier and my boxing gloves. I took my protein shake and took my car keys waving goodbye to Greta.

“Don’t hurt yourself too much. I am telling you I hate this all things that you are doing” she grumbled while I sipped my drink.

“Wow! Thanks for your motivation Greta” throwing my sarcasm I walked out of my house towards my Garage where I took my Jeep because Blush was out for servicing and drove off to “Battles”.

It was a underground fight club where matches are organised for fighters in every three year where one can win heavy amount of cash prize.

I have been training for this match from last year. I have won many small matches were I won cash prizes but this is different. This cash prize can Chang my whole life. I don’t need to fight any longer for living. I could start my own business with the cash prize for living.

I sighed as I thought of the fighters that are going to take part today. The difficult part of this match is that it is of one day. George has informed me that today all the fighters who are going to take part in this match are coming from different part of the globe just to win. Hence each fighter has to fight three opponents for clearing each round. The two finalist who will succeed to win all tgree rounds will play the final fourth round against each other and the winner gets the cash while runner up will get a contract of three years as a professional fighting coach.

I am just super excited as well as nervous. This is a Co fight. Which means both men and women can take part. Yes! It's going to be the first time ever that women will fight against men.

I don't care about men but I know we women can show what we have got.

As I reached near my destination, I began to hear large crowds of fan and people cheering, music and excitation.

"Gosh!" I muttered when I saw the huge crowd.

I had to park my Jeep inside the building where only the participants were allowed. I took out my ID and George came for my guidance.

"They are so excited" I said as I pointed towards the crowd while George nodded smirking.

"What do you think babe? This is the biggest fight show ever" he spoke as he began to walk and I followed him.

"Are you ready?" He asked to which I nodded.

"Are you sure you want to do this?" He questioned.

"Yes why?" I asked

"Because Aderyn those participants out there are not just some fighters. They are" he air quoted "professional and fierce fighters" he finished.

I just nodded. He is saying this because he has never witnessed me fighting. I heard about this match and I asked him to get me into this.

"Yeah I will manage" I muttered.

He looked at me as he stopped before a door with concern evident on his face. He was tall man with black hair and black eyes. He had always this stubble on his face which he would never shave and always in a tidy suite.

"Well this is your room. Get ready and you are third" he gave me my key and turned around to leave but I stopped him.

"George!"

"Yeah?"

"How many fighters are there?" I asked

"33 and 10 are female fighters including you" he filled me with the information and I nodded.

"Best of luck for your fight" he wished and I smiled saying a quite "Thank you".

I entered into my room. It was just a small room with lockers and bench and mirror. A bathroom was also attached to the room. Quickly I changed into my red shorts and tank top. I wore my shoes and did a quick warm up. Taking out my gloves I stated at it for some minutes and smiled when I thought where I was now.

Life has brought me to a place where I never belonged. If I weren't here then I would've been studying Engineering or maybe law for my future but never this.

I heard people cheering which means the fight has already begun. Referee whistling and the ring.

I began to work on my breathing. As I do not know with whom I was going to fight I should not underestimate anyone. Because who never know what your opponent has got.

There was a knock in my door and George came in rush "let's go its your turn now" he said and I stood up following him. My heart was hammering against my chest.

"Two Female fighters are already out of this match are you sure?" He questioned.

I just nodded.

"Alright! You are fighting with Rebecca in Ring no 3" he pointed towards the ring and I nodded getting it.

I waited till my name gets announced. The crowd was getting wild. People shouting and cheering. And then I hear it "Alright people its time for our other fighters" and more cheering if people.

"From second wing Miss Rebecca Harper" the anchor announced and I heard people getting excited as my opponent made her way towards the ring.

"And from wing one a have Miss uh Flame?" He called and I made my way out. People began to cheer. I heard some "boo" sounds probably people were judging from my psychic.

I saw Rebecca inside the ring.

"Damn! she was tall too tall and bulky" I thought but I kept my composure calm and my expressions neutral.

"Go back home babe you are not meant for fighting" I heard a guy shouting.

"Hey sexy! Wanna go out on a date?" I heard another.

I made my way towards the ring but a certain voice startled me "I believe upon you".

That voice was so familiar. It made me stop on my tracks. I looked here and there searching for that person but I didn't find anyone.

"What happened? Are you scared baby girl?"

“Having second thoughts now?” I heard people mocking me to which I only ignored.

I composed myself but looked here and there again before going inside the ring.

“Damn! She looks even more taller from here” I thought.

Rebecca who was a blonde smirked at me and wore her gloves while I adjusted mine.

“Go back home kid this is not for you” she mocked me.

I just shrugged in reply.

“Alright you two ready?” The referee asked while we said our “Yes”.

“On the count of three” he announced.

People began to cheer.

“One!” I took my position

“Two!” Rebecca smirked at me

“Three!” I heard the ring and it began with Rebecca running towards me. And the next moment she was down senseless.

It happened so quickly. She running towards me. Me punching right in her face and she falling in the ground senseless.

Everyone stopped cheering and I heard quite “What the fuck” from astonished people.

“Did you see that man? She knocked her out with only one punch”

“Woah! What’s going on?”

“Is this even real?”

There was this comments and people whispering.

“Woah!” The anchor finally butted in.

I looked up towards the Big TV screen where my punch was being re winded.

“One! Two! Three...” the referee began to count while the people who were with Rebecca shouted for her to get up.

“Winner!” The referee took my hand into the air.

People began to cheer and about in excitement. Looks like I gained a huge crowd for supporting me.

"Unbelievable! It was a such a small fight. I can't believe it she knocked Rebecca out in just one blow" the anchor commented.

I made my way out of the ring and passed George whose mouth was hanging open.

"Close it" I pointed as I passed him.

"Ladies and Gentlemen we have Flame going to second round now" I heard while I got inside my room.

It's just the beginning. *This is power unleashed.*

*****

Chapter 33

Aderyn Pov

I have been waiting in my room for two hours. More two rounds in particular to go. My turn to fight is yet to come. I had to splash water onto my face three to four times due to the sweat forming on my skin.

“Aderyn! Second round. Let’s go” George barged into my room.

I rolled my eyes at his manners.

Wearing my Gloves I made my way out of my room.

“This one is going to be tough babe. You are going to fight a Hercules type of man now” he spoke as we walk. I chose to stay quite as I always do.

I could still hear people shouting and screaming. It seems as if people were getting more wild with every round.

“It’s time for our round two Ladies and Gentlemen” I heard the anchor announcing as I stood inside the wing waiting for his announcement.

“We have Theo Holmes from our wing five” I peeped a little to see a video of Theo playing on that big TV screen. The video was of his last fight as how he defeated his opponent.

“Man! He was more taller and bulkier than my last opponent” I thought.

I watched as he made his way towards the ring with ease as if he owns the place. He threw his hood somewhere and began to roar at people for cheering him.

“Huh” I scoffed

“And now it’s our fighter who finished her fight within less than four seconds making a record” everyone screamed “Flame” and then I entered taking a deep breath with call composure.

“Flame!”

“Babe I changed my mind. You fight! Fight! Fight!”

“Hey sexy you are sexy as hell”

“Oh please go out on a date with me” I smirked at this comment.

So desperate!

“You had no chance against this bull babe”

I heard people screaming and cheering with their respective comments.

“He is nothing in front of you” again the same voice which made me startled again. But I kept on walking. I was not able to recognize the voice because of people shouting and howling. Moreover, the voice was really low as if it was meant only for me to here.

I made my way into the ring while Theo who looked similar to Undertaker paced on his side like a hungry lion.

“Gosh! What have I got myself into” I muttered to myself.

He looked like a man who didn’t care who was in front of him. Male or Female. And by the way he was staring at me and pacing, it told me that he was ready to kill me.

“Fighter Ready?” The referee whistled and asked.

“Ready!” I nodded as I took my place.

“Hmm” Theo just hummed.

“On the count of three”

“One!” My heart bear started to rise again.

“Two!” People screamed counting the number with the referee.

“And Three!” Ringing voice and whistling was all I could hear.

Unlike my first opponent Theo didn’t lunge at me instead he chose not to underestimate me and tired to read my moves.

We began to walk in circles waiting for each other’s attack. When none of us did I chose to be the first one to attack as I always loved to attack than defense.

I lunged at him and began to threw punches directly on his face but he blocked it using his hands. In other moment I punched hard on his stomach which caused him to stumble back a little bit he composed himself quickly and lunged at me throwing a punch on my side.

He was fast.

Pain strikes towards my side due to his punch.

“Damn!” I cursed as I held my side.

He didn't even give me time to recover as he again lunged at me throwing punches on my face. I got few punches on my face and I was sure it was going to leave bruises. But somehow I managed to block his punches using my forearm.

The next moment I found myself being lifted up and being thrown to ground. Pain flooded into my body and my shoulder twisted oddly making me curse.

Thank god I was fast as I blocked myself from breaking my shoulder by falling backwards.

I saw him jumping on me but before he could break my rib-cage I rolled towards my left saving myself from his deadly attack.

I wasted no time to get up. Before he could get up I kicked on his side and lunged at him punching directly on his face.

People were screaming more by this time.

He used his leg and kicked me again in my hurt side. I winced in pain and stumbled back. He got up on his feet but before he fully stand up I lunged again at him as I jumped on him and using my legs I tangled my legs in his neck and using my body weight took both of us down but with him beneath me.

He winced in pain because I knew I hit his head and back badly.

I got up back on my feet and threw punches at him sitting in top of him.

He was howling in pain and failed to save himself by blocking me. Blood began to ooze out of his cuts from his face and the next moment I was pulled off him by the referee.

I was panting badly. I had to take several breathes to call myself down.

"One! Two! Three!" The referee counted but stopped when Theo stood up on his feet.

"Oh man!" I thought

"Fight!" The referee announced and both of us lunged at each other. With several punches both of us were trying our best and finally I was out of breath.

I was painting badly as I walked backwards.

"One! Two! Three!..." the referee began to count while the audience joined him counting for Theo again who was now lying in the floor panting badly. He was definitely out of breath.

"Winner!" I was announced as the winner.

The crowd howled and cheered calling "Flame! Flame! Flame"

I walked out of the ring.

“Only one left now” I thought

“Ladies and Gentlemen Flame made it to the third round. Our first female participant to make it to the third round” the anchor announced as the crowd grew more wild and I began to hear people cheering my name.

I walked back into my room and as soon as I was inside I fell on the floor.

I was drained out.

I was breathing heavily and sweating badly. Throwing my gloves I took a deep breath as I spread my legs and hands resting them for some minutes.

I was tired.

Slowly when my breathing was even I got up from where I was lying and walked towards the bathroom. Splashing water on my face, I tried to calm myself.

Then using a towel I wiped away the water from my face and sat on the bench relaxing. I drank my protein shake and took out a packet which I was given by George to eat.

The packet contained bread and banana.

I ate it silently and after I was done I threw the packet into the dustbin. Now I was totally relaxed. My energy was back and I felt good. My side still hurt but I tried to apply ice pack on it to give myself little relaxation.

It’s been already an hour. Round 2 is over I guess and now people had taken a break to eat something.

“Aderyn!” I looked towards the door to find George again barging in without knocking.

“Hmm?”

“Did you eat something?” He asked

“Yup!”

“You are fourth this time and the match will start in fifteen minutes” he spoke as he walked towards me and sat next to me on the bench.

“Okay”

“Uh tell me something” he began

“What?”

“How do you know how to fight? I mean you were great out there. I never kWh that you could fight like that” he looked excited.

I smiled and replied ” My father taught me. He was a professional coach”.

I chose to lie but half of it was correct because my father did teach me some techniques before me joining the organisation.

“Wow! He must be good”

“Yup! He was” I replied as I looked towards the mirror.

“Was? Oh I am so sorry” he gave me his condolence.

“No don’t be its okay” I replied.

“Okay you get ready. All the best and you are not allowed to use Gloves this time. Wrap that bandage on your knuckles which is in that second packet. I will be back to call you” he stood up and walked out of the door.

I took out the packet and inside it their was a black bandage which I wrapped around my knuckles and wrist.

“Aderyn let’s go!” George called me exactly after fifteen minutes more.

“I think you are going to win this very easily babe” he looked more excited.

“Why so ?” I asked confused seeing his excitement.

“Out there your opponent is a female and she looks weaker. She is thin just like you and is small in size. You will surely go to the finals”

“If she is that weak than st wouldn’t have reached this far George” my statement startled him.

“Uh! Right!” He understood.

“We have our four fighters ready ladies and Gentlemen” the anchor announced as the crowd went wild once again.

“And they are Matthew Gonzales” I saw the big screen playing his last fight where he defeated his opponent.

“Second is Rico de’Souza” the crowd went more wild hearing his name. I saw the video and was surprised to see his fighting techniques.

“Damn he was using mix martial arts techniques” I thought

“And our third fighter is Andreevna” every one screamed Andreevna and the video played of her last fight.

“And our Fourth one ladies and Gentlemen is our Flame” the audience came to live with howling and cheering.

“This fighters are our semi-finalists who will now fight against their opponents and the two winners will fight against eacheother to win this Battle for our trophy and prize ladies and Gentlemen”

“Ring 1 Matthew and Andreevna” people screamed more.

“Ring 2 Flame and Rico” I walked out of the wing towards my ring.

“Why the hell he chosen as my opponent?” I thought to myself.

“Just believe upon yourself like I do” I heard it again. Now I was starting to recognize that voice but how in the world is he doing here?

“Fighter ready?” The referee asked.

“Ready!” We both said at the same time.

“On the count of three. One! Two! Three” and we began.

“And the winner is Flame” the anchor announced screaming.

Everyone cheered and some even whistled for my victory. I made it. I was panting real hard but I had this smile on my face. This was the toughest fight. But I made it. Rico was down but not senseless. He gave up before me.

“Ladies and Gentleman! This is unbelievable. We have our first finalist Flame!” Everyone clapped for me as I walked back towards my room with a smile on my face. I was contented. I was contented upon myself for finally making it to the final.

This was the first time ever where I was feeling proud of myself for learning how to fight. In reality I always loathed it. It always reminded me of my sufferings and the reason why I learnt it in the first place. But today I am feeling blessed. I made it to this level with my own hard work and training.

As I got into my room, I ran to the mirror and looked myself in it. I was glowing with happiness. For the first time of my life I saw my eyes glowing. It wasn’t dull any longer, but it was full of life and most importantly happiness. Finally I found me. I found myself.

I laughed a little enjoying my victory.

“Matthew is our other finalist ladies and gentleman” I heard the announcement.

“Aderyn!” George barged in.

“Ah George come! I was waiting for you to show up” I said smiling.

“Oh my Gosh Aderyn I can’t believe this! You are finalist” he exclaimed happily as he hugged me.

I laughed and patted his back.

“Yup I made it” I said in a happy tone.

“You know what? I thought you would never make it but now I want you to win this” he spoke as he held my shoulder.

“Ah George! I am happy that I at least reached this stage. It doesn’t matter now if I win or n-” he cut me off “No! No don’t think like that Aderyn. The cash prize is huge and you gotta win this because you have the capability and you need to prove those people out there what you have got. C’mon Aderyn you made to this level. You can win this. Have faith upon yourself Aderyn. You can do this” he finished out of breath.

“Woah! Relax will you” I said amused.

“No! First tell me that you are gonna give your best” he jumped up and down like a maniac.

“Yeah! Yeah Okay I will do my best” I spoke up.

“Yes! That’s like a good girl now relax yourself. Your fight will start in thirty minutes” he said as he turned around and walked out of the room.

“I can do this!” I muttered to myself.

“Fighters ready?” The referee asked.

“Ready!” I said and Matthew nodded.

“On the count of three. One! Two! And three!” and we fought. We both were fighting only for that trophy. We used our whole energy and fought against each other. Neither of us were giving up.

“Flame! Flame! Flame!” Sixty percent of the audience were cheering for me.

And one last blow and he was done.

Sounds of cracker and applaud was heard. I knelt down as blood fell on the floor from my mouth. He punched really hard. I was panting and vision was blurry.

“Our winner ladies and gentlemen” I saw Matthew coming towards me as he bent down before me and gave me his hand to take.

I took it and tried to stand up.

“Is Flame!” Everyone screamed “Flame” as Matthew himself raised my hands up in the air.

“Well done! Congratulations!” He spoke as he side hugged me and clapped for me with the audience.

“Thank you” I managed to speak.

I could feel my eyes getting teary and at the same time again I was feeling lonely. Because there was no one who would be proud for me getting the trophy. Everybody were just cheering for me but in that cheering I wished for anyone who would wait for me and hug me tightly feeling proud for me for winning.

Again Aderyn was alone.

“We happily announce the winner Miss Flame whose real name is a secret for all of us is our winner. She wins our cash prize and the trophy. Ladies and Gentlemen cheer up for our winning beauty and the fighter” the anchor announced as the sponsor handed me the cash prize cheque and the trophy.

I smiled at the audience showing them the huge trophy and raised my hands in victory for the photographers to take a good photograph.

I was happy.

My eyes widened in surprise when I saw a person clapping for me and for the first time I saw a genuine smile on his face which was directed for me.

He walked towards me from the audience.

I was flabbergasted.

“H-How?” I thought

He walked and stood directly at front of me with a smiling face. Wearing his black leather jacket and black jeans he looked more handsome than ever. He had a little stubble on his face but that made him look more manly.

He reached his hands towards me and took the trophy from me holding it with happiness.

“I am so proud. I knew you could do this” he spoke lowly but still I could hear him in all this audience cheering noise.

“D-Dylan?” I managed to speak.

He looked down at me and smiled even more speaking

“Hello!”

*****

Chapter 34

Dylan Pov

I watched her expression as I applied the ice pack on her strained ankle. She was continuously staring at me as if I were some ghost.

“Ahhh!” She cried when I applied a little pressure on her ankle.

“Oh Sorry!” I apologized.

“What in the world are you doing here?” She yelled when she got out of her little world.

“Uh applying ice pack on your leg I guess” I told her as I watched her eyes growing the size of saucer.

“Oh right!” She said confused then as if it stroke her mind she narrowed her eyes and starts the glaring.

“I mean what are you doing here?” She spoke explaining me by moving her hands.

“I told yo-” she cut me off “No! Not this ice thing I mean what are you” she pointed her index finger towards me “Here” she pointed her finger towards her house.

“That only I said helping you” I told her and watched as she began to shake with anger.

“What the hell Dylan?” and she was back to yelling.

I rolled my eyes and continued doing my work.

“Don’t ignore me now” she yelled as I stopped applying the ice pack.

“No! You continue with that thing and listen to me” she pointed towards the ice pack.

I made a face to her strangeness but continued applying the ice pack.

“How did you find me? And what are you doing in my house? Didn’t I told you to leave me alone you stalker” she began to yell again.

I am a werewolf king for god sake. Finding her is almost easy for me. All I had to do was to send a mind image of her to every werewolf in this world to help and eventually I was informed three weeks earlier about her and that is how I found her. I found out everything about her easily. Where she was staying. What she was doing everything.

I eventually came to know about her match. At first I was angry about it. I didn't want her to take risk about her life. What if something happened to her in that match?

But when I saw to she was training day and night for the match, seeing her hardworking and determination I gave up the feeling to stop her from in that match.

I was actually stalking her from this last few weeks. Everyday seeing her work out made my day. Her strength was growing day by day and so was my enthusiasm to see her fighting. My wolf was very much proud of his mate who was not only strong but can take care of herself.

Aderyn never depended upon anyone for living and that is why I respect her decision the most of taking part in that match. I had faith on her that she will surely make it and win. And she did.

"And you!" She screamed pointing her finger towards the old lady whose name was Greta.

"You are also a werewolf? A freaking werewolf?" she screamed while Greta nodded.

Turns out she was living with a Luna. Her mate Alpha of a pack has died few years ago and since then she has been living alone in here, not alone exactly, with Aderyn while her son who is the Alpha now, runs the pack.

"Yes Luna" Greta spoke as she bowed her head a little.

Eventually, Greta came to know that Aderyn was the Queen and since then she has been treating Aderyn appropriately.

"Again Luna!" Aderyn threw her hands in the air irritated.

"What is wrong with you?" She exclaimed as she put the ice pack on her head "Ah my head" she sighed.

"Will you just relax a little? Your muscles are tensed" I spoke up seeing as her muscle tensed under my hand.

"How in the world am I gonna relax until you tell me what are you doing here?" She cried as she began to hit her head using the ice pack.

"Hey relax!" I stood up and took away the ice pack away from her.

"Probably she got a hit on her head during that fight. That's why she was behaving like a mad woman" I thought.

"I am mad? What did you say? I am mad?" She began to scream.

"Did I say that loud?" I thought.

“Yes you did. You are mad. Do you understand? You are mad” she screamed moving her hands in the air like a cartoon.

“Relax!” I began but she again cut me off “No! First say it”.

I made a confused expression to what she was talking.

“Say I am mad” she banged her hand on her thigh.

“Okay! You are mad now don’t do that” I said as I removed her hand from from her thigh saving her from bruising herself. I do have an Idea what that hands of her could do by witnessing today’s match.

“No! No! Say you are mad” she spoke irritated.

“Yeah! That only I said just now” I spoke as I watched her face growing red with anger.

“No! No! No! Don’t you understand? Say I” she pointed her finger towards me “means You! Dylan is mad” she was stressing herself even more and now I was beginning to feel worried about her listening to her fasten heartbeats.

“Okay! Okay fine! I am mad. Happy?” I spoke as I kept the ice pack back on the table and sat in front of her on the sofa.

“Finally! Yes!” She muttered to herself.

“Now tell me What are you doing here?” again back to questioning.

“You know I used to like it when you spoke less earlier” I told her and watched as she grew silent.

“Fine! I won’t ask you anything” she exclaimed as she got up from the sofa and began to walk towards her room.

“You stupid human! See what you did. You made her angry again” my wolf yelled at me.

“Aderyn listen!” I ran to her and stood in front of her blocking her from going anywhere.

“Arrgh! Dylan what are you doing? Get off my way” she exclaimed as she tried to walk past me but was unable to as I blocked her way again.

“What?” She snapped.

“Okay I am sorry I didn’t mean that. I mean I like it when you talk” I tried to explain.

“Dyla-” she began I stopped her ” Listen to me Aderyn I will tell you everything tomorrow. I promise. I think you should rest now. You utilised too much of energy today and you need to relax a little now okay?”

She sighed and nodded speaking lowly “okay”.

“So now go and sleep. And as this is your house I wanted to ask can I stay here?” I asked genuinely.

“Will you go away if I say no?” She asked to which I shook my head negative.

“Exactly! See? Why are you even asking? Stay wherever you want” she said as she walked past me towards the stairs.

“But I want answers tomorrow and I mean it” she said as she looked back at me sternly.

“And don’t think that I forgive you for the last time” she said and turned around walking out of my sight.

“I know” I mumbled as I took the trophy that she won and walked towards the guest room.

Seeing that trophy I felt proud of my mate. It made me see the real color of life. This is life. If you want to survive then you need to keep fighting and that is what Aderyn did. But now I think this is probably her last match which she fought for her living. I knew that she took part in the first place, only for living not for any enjoyment.

I will damned if I let her fight like those match again risking her life for money. As much as she loved being independent in this matter, she has to learn being dependent now. Learn to be depended on her mate who is me.

She doesn’t need to do all this now.

I am there to take care of her. That is why I let her fight today so that it would engrave on her mind that she doesn’t need to fight again for survival. It will be one of her good memory where she found herself. I wanted to give her some good memories which will not actually erase all those past sufferings but at least give her some good memories which she will remember till her end.

“You are thinking too much Dylan. Now sleep! You need energy to answer all her questions tomorrow” I spoke to myself as I changed into my shorts and t-shirt and lied down on the bed and tried to sleep.

“What a day!” I thought as I sighed and drifted to sleep.

****

Chapter 35

Aderyn Pov

“Now speak up!” I said as I tapped my foot impatiently on the floor.

“Why are you so impatient?” Dylan complained as he styled his hair using his hand. I looked at him through the mirror and then glared at him.

“Yeah! Yeah! Your hair is perfect already. Leave it and will you answer my questions now?” I asked as I waited for him to speak.

“Oh shut up already” I heard him mutter and I stomped my feet.

“Fine!” I gave up and turned back walking out of his room, means my room.

“What will you have for Breakfast Lu- uh Aderyn?” Greta asked and I gave her an incredulous look.

“So, now you are asking what to make for breakfast? You never asked me before so why now?” I questioned

She stood quietly waiting for my reply.

“Fine! Make whatever you want” I said as I walked towards the living room and sat on the sofa leaning against it and closed my eyes.

“How is your leg?” I heard Dylan’s voice after some minutes.

I kept quiet not answering his question. If he can’t answer my question then why should I?

I heard him sighing and minutes later some shuffling sound. Still I didn’t bother to open my eyes.

I felt him touching my sprained leg. Immediately, tingles formed wherever he touched and the fact that I was wearing a short pant which ended up on my knee didn’t help.

My palms formed into a fist as I struggled myself from any kind of reaction due to his mere touch.

“Its still swollen” he muttered probably examining my foot.

He kept my leg on his thigh and began to trace on it using his finger, sending more tingles and this time I curled my toes not able to stop myself from controlling the weird feeling.

“I know you are having a tingling sensation wherever I touch” he spoke out of the blue.

“What the-” how did he know that? I thought to myself.

“And you must be thinking how did I know that right? Cause I can feel it too” he said I furrowed my eyebrows questionably still not opening my eyes.

“Feel it too?” I found myself whispering.

“Bell must have told you everything about us. Probably everything. But there is still something you still do not know and she left it for me to explain it to you”.

Hearing about Bell my heart warmed up and even clenched. I didn’t meet to bid her goodbye when I left. She must be very sad as well as angry upon me. Anyone in her place would have reacted the same way.

“You know right I am also a werewolf? Not just some werewolf but Alpha of Alphas. The King” he spoke as he held my foot and rubbed it using his palms.

Though it was aching, but his touch was like soothing it.

“Every werewolf needs a mate. A mate is a soul mate of a werewolf. At first I use to think that I would never have a mate like other werewolves. I already has so much responsibilities upon me that I never even thought about it.”

“You know everything about my past right?” He asked and unknowingly applied pressure on my foot which made me to wince in pain.

“Sorry. I am so sorry” his voice was filled with regret as he tried to ease the pain slowly rubbing on that foot.

I knew he did that unintentionally. His past was a very sensitive topic for him and it pained him whenever he recalls it. Just like mine.

“I am so stupid. I hurt you every time but trust me it was always unintentional” his voice filled with regret and immediately I don’t know why but I wanted to console him but I held myself from doing so.

“You have seen Cole with his mate Jenny right?”

“They love each other so much. None of them could stay away from each other for a single day. When Jenny left for her pack Cole was so sad but he wanted her happiness. He let her go but made sure to call her everyday at least two times just to know if she was alright.”

“That’s the mate bond.”

“Mate bond” he stopped and I heard him chuckling and then he continued “It makes you do silly things. At first, I thought it as useless and Childish hearing and witnessing what mate bond did to werewolves but now I can’t even explain how I am feeling right now”.

“What does he mean?” I thought.

“Everyone thinks of me as some Ruthless King who doesn’t have any heart. None of them ever cared for me. I was only a care taker of them. I may be a King but never did I ever felt special whenever I was around them. Power can give you that special feeling but not that type of feeling which you feel whenever someone cares for you. When someone sits next to you and take care of you when you are sick or feel yourself lonely.”

He stopped talking probably again recalling his past. My heart clenched hearing him. I knew he was telling me about how he felt when he was alone and somehow I wanted to console him because I suffered that loneliness too.

I gave him his space and waited for him to continue.

Minutes later, I heard him taking a deep breath and then continued.

“I know you must have gone through the same thing as me. But your case is more sensitive then mine.”

My palms formed into a fist as I took his words in.

“You know Aderyn, when I met you for the first time I did a mistake. I did a big mistake of my life by judging you. I saw you always smiling, joking around and somehow I found myself being jealous of you.”

“Yes, jealous. I know its really stupid but I really felt jealous seeing you. I always compared your life with mine. I used to think you had a perfect life. You were so carefree and every time I saw you, I found you always energetic that it made me jealous. I started to curse my fate for doing all that things to me when I was a kid.”

“I used to think you had everything in your life. Your life was so perfect and bright whereas mine was so ugly. It was dark, full of secrets and scars was all that I had.”

My mind began to question even more.

“Why was he talking all this with me? Not that I complain or something because he was being open to me. But still I don’t understand where it was going?” I thought to myself.

“So, the thing is we are different. We I mean you and me are totally different. Its not just that I am a werewolf and you are a human but we are different in many ways. But there are some things which is common between us. We fight with each other. We can not stand each other. So many similarities are there actually but some qualities in you make you more better than me”.

“Qualities?” I thought.

“Sometimes, I find myself confused that what should I do whenever I am learning anything new about you. Some things in you are so inspirational while some ar- I don’t know what to say.”

“Uh what am I saying?” I heard him talking to himself.

“Anyways, Now it is the time. The time has finally came for you to know everything. I am going to answer all your questions today because I am more impatient than you to tell you all this. I want you to know everything. And what I am going to tell you, will be uh will be kind of disturbing to you but you have to deal with it. I know you are strong enough to deal with all this werewolf thing but this uh how would I explain? Uh very different from it.”

I mentally rolled my eyes thinking What can be more disturbing than knowing about this werewolf existence.

“Okay so here it is” he said and took a deep breath.

“I told I never believed upon all those love stories or neither I ever imagined finding a mate, who will love me because who I am, never judge me, will always stay with me, give me a family.”

He stopped speaking.

“Family” I heard him whisper with a tone of happiness.

“I can not believe my fate. This is really exceptional and unbelievable for me.”

“So, I found my mate” he blurted out of nowhere making me choke on my own spit.

“What?” I said as my eyes fluttered open out of shock.

“What did you just say?” I asked opening my mouth for the first time in all this conversation.

He smiled at me and repeated again “I found my mate. My soulmate.”

I don’t know why but hearing that he found his mate my heart clenched in pain.

Why am I feeling like this?

I should be happy right? He found his mate. His other half. He will no longer feel lonely and finally his life will be repaired, will be in order. I should feel happy for him right? So why am I feeling this uneasiness?

I should be happy at least one of us will be finally living a happy life.

“You found your mate?” I asked slowly.

He smiled and nodded, his eyes clearly showing happiness.

My throat went dry and I raised my eyebrow smiling or should I say tried to smile still shocked.

“T-That’s Great. Wow! Uh great! Yes good I mean uh Congrats!” I spoke not finding any words.

“You really found your mate?” I asked again trying to re-confirm.

“Yes I found my mate” he replied and it was all for my heart to clench in pain once again.

“Good!” I muttered.

“So, where is she? I mean you are here because you found her here right?” I asked.

He shooked his head negatively.

“No, I found her few months ago but I was just not accepting it. I was pushing her away from me” he replied as he again began to rub my foot with his big palms.

“Why did you do that?” I scowled hearing that he was pushing her away.

“Because I was an Idiot!” He replied and his answer surprised me.

“Wow! You are already changing huh? So, this is her effect?” I asked

“Yes. You can say that” he laughed a little.

“Tell me about her” I asked even though I didn’t want to hear anything about his mate.

“About her? Umm what should I say? She is beautiful. I just love her smile. Whenever I see her smiling, my heart begins to beat even faster.

“Hmm” I said not wanting to say anything.

“She is really inspirational. You will always learn new things about her.”

I nodded my head.

“The most important part about her is that she is really brave. I mean nobody stands a chance against her.”

“That’s why your wicket is down already” I muttered to myself but he heard me “Yes totally. I agree to that.”

“Great! You found your match! Congratulations! So, you two sing song enjoy now. What are you doing here? Here in my house?” I asked and suddenly I didn’t know why but I was really irritated as well as angry.

“Yeah! I was going to that part” he said while I crossed my hands across my chest uninterested.

“I am here to take back my mate with me” he said and I raised my eyebrows confused.

“Take back? Where is she?” I asked confused.

“Right before me. She is sitting right before my eyes” he said and smiled when he saw my wide eyes.

“Aderyn my mate.”

*****

Chapter 36

Aderyn Pov

I sat there staring at him as if he had horns attached to his head. What he told me just now didn't go well with my mind.

"What?" was what I managed to utter. Then I cleared my throat and looked here and there.

"Sorry? What did you just say? I didn't get you" I asked again thinking maybe I heard him wrong.

He looked calm and had an knowing expression on his face as if he knew I was going to react this way.

He gave me a small smile and once again I found him trailing his finger on my foot sending shiver down my spine.

"I know you can feel these tingles whenever I touch you. This is the mate bond and this is the proof that you are my mate" he told me as he continued trailing his finger on my foot.

I shook my head and withdrew my leg away from his hold and sat straight.

"This is impossible. I am not your mate. I am a human for god sake!" I threw my hands up in the air.

"Well you are my mate. Of course my human mate" he told me as he leaned back on his seat and smiled at me.

I was shocked as well as surprised.

Damn. I could have get all this long back if only I hadn't ignored the simple simple things.

Like people calling me Luna.

Like the way I felt whenever he touched me.

Like the way ... urg

This is all my fault.

"I know you what must be thinking. But let me get this clear to you. You are my mate and the Luna to all those werewolves. I came here to take you back. Lets go home" he said and I gave him a look.

"Home?" I spoke as I looked at him incredulously.

“Well this is my home. I am not going anywhere. You are going. Look I might be your mate but do you think I am even capable of doing my duty when I am just a simple human. For god sake I used to think this all stuffs exists only in stories and all but one day I find it all true and real, before my eyes. How the hell do you expect me to react knowing that you all exists and the most importantly out of nowhere I am your mate and a Luna to all those werewolves. No way, I am not gonna do this. I am happy here. As my life is. I will not go anywhere. So pack your stuffs and leave” I knew I was harsh.

I watched him seating there comfortably listening to all my rantings. Then he spoke “Ofcourse You are Aderyn after all. And here I thought you would be happy knowing all this” it came out in a sarcastic way.

Before I could open my mouth to reply him. His phone began to ring. He took it out and excused himself getting up from his seat and walking near the staircase talking on his phone.

“Huh Mate my ass” I muttered as I crossed my arms across my chest and leaned back against my seat still processing it all in my mind.

I am not his mate.

“Sure you are not” and my irritating inner voice was back.

“Oh Shut up” I snapped at her.

“Ofcourse” she talked back.

“I am not his mate” I told her.

“Oh really?” She mocked.

“Oh shut up already” I snapped and looked up to find Dylan giving me a weird look.

“Whom are you talking with?” He asked confused.

I found my cheeks burning and I composed myself saying “Nobody.”

He nodded and shoved his hands into his pant pockets.

“So?” He asked.

“So what?” I asked.

“When are you packing your stuffs?” He asked looking at me in a neutral face.

“For what?” I asked furrowing my eyebrows.

“Uh You are shifting back to my place. Back to the pack house” he said and my eyes widened in shock.

“What?”

“Woahhh!! Easy man when did we decide this? And who you told you that I will leaving my home?” I questioned as I stood on my legs and winced a little when my foot touched the ground.

Immediately Dylan was before me holding my arm, supporting me, giving me a worried look.

“Uh I’m Okay” I said feeling little weird. Nobody cared for me before.

“And I am not going anywhere” and I was back to arguing.

He rolled his eyes at me and shoved his hands into his pant pockets while I walked sidestepping him towards the table to drink some water.

“Pack your bags before 3 Pm. We will be leaving sharp at 3” he told me ignoring my argument.

“Do you not hear me?” I snapped

“I said I am not leaving. This is my house and I am not going anywhere. I don’t care mate or not but I am not going anywhere and that’s final” I said as I poured some water into the glass from the jug and gulped it down my throat in one gulp.

I looked towards him to find him opening his mouth probably to say something but he stopped closing his mouth and sniffing the air.

“What are yo-” I was cut off by the door bell.

I gave him a look and then walked towards the door.

As Soon as I opened it I was engulfed into a tight bone breaking hug.

“Aderyn! Aderyn! Aderyn!” the person screamed in happiness as he crushed me even more.

“Ge-George let me go” I managed to speak though I felt I was going to die anytime soon.

But Suddenly I was like snatched away by an arm which wrapped around my waist and I was lifted up and then put down behind a muscular back and the next moment I could see George hanging up in the air by his collar.

“Mine!”

“How dare you touch whats mine?”

“Mine!”

"She is Mine"

I was shocked as well as flabbergasted seeing Dylan like this. He looked beyond angry and his body looked tensed. His voice was mixed with a beast like tone as well as anger.

"Dy-Dylan what are doing? Put him down" I found my voice and soon I was trying to set George free from Dylan.

"Ade-Ader-y-n" George coughed hanging in the air.

"Dylan put him down. You are going to kill him" I tried again holding his arm trying to let him loosen his hold on George but it was as if my efforts were nothing before him.

I couldn't even move a single muscle of his arm.

"Dylan let him go" I even punched his arm.

"Mine!" He growled tightening his grip on George's collar.

"Wrap your arm around him. Make him Relax" I heard Greta running toward us.

"I what?" I asked confused.

"Make him Relax. Wrap your arms around him" she urged me to do it.

"What? No way!" I told her. In no way I was going to do that.

"Ade-ry-n help me" George managed to speak begging me.

"Do it!" Greta forced.

"No way! Dylan put him down" I snapped.

"He will not listen to anything. He is angry because another male touched his mate before him. If you do not hurry he is going to choke him" Greta looked panicked and her panicking face worried me.

"So just do it" she urged me.

"Okay Fine! I am doing it" I said and looked towards Dylan who was still choking George.

"Oh God!" I whispered to myself and reluctantly put my arms around his chest.

"Dylan let him go" I said slowly and started to rub my palms on his raging chest. I was really surprised because soon he was slowly putting George down on his feet but he didn't loosen his grip.

“Dylan leave him” I spoke into his ears standing on my tip toes due to height difference which I am hating the most right now. I couldn’t reach his ear still after standing on my toes.

“Mine!” He growled tightening his grip on George’s collar.

“Dy-Dylan leave him” I spoke urgently seeing his grip tightening on his collar. So I tightened my hold onto his chest and rubbed my palms even more in a soothing way.

“Let him go Dylan” I whispered and this time he let him go.

George stumbled and fell back on his butt on the floor coughing vigorously.

“Oh dear!” Greta was immediately by his side helping him.

I sighed as I loosened my arms around Dylan but as if he didn’t like it he took hold of my hand and pulled me before him.

“Dylan!” I screamed and in a instant my heart stammered and it began to beat wildly against my chest as I acknowledged the foreign feelings inside me.

He took hold of me and nuzzled his face inside the crook of my neck making my heart beat rise even more.

“Dy-Dylan what are you doing” I felt my cheeks getting hot and I tried to push him away but I stopped more like freeze when he bit down on the skin of my neck. It wasn’t painful but the mere touch of his teeth did something miserable to my body.

I lost my control on my body as I felt tingles forming on that place where he bit down. My whole body was on fire and I cursed internally because whatever I was feeling right now was utterly new to me and somehow I was liking it when I wasn’t suppose to.

“Mine!” He whispered and sniffed my hair.

My body scent was somehow calming him. His hold on my waist tightened as he pulled me incredibly closer to him. I was sure my cheeks would have been redder like a tomato right now but I was too shocked to even comprehend what was even happening in my surroundings.

I laughed nervously and gaining my senses I tried to push him away.

“Dylan!” I called when I felt his hold tightening.

“Dylan!” I snapped when he didn’t even budge.

“Dylan?” I called again and this time his hold loosened around me and he let me go. I watched as his eyes turned back to its original color and the anger subsided and that animal like feature subsided gaining its human feature.

I loved his eyes.

He stared down at me and I stood frozen, hypnotized by his orbs.

“Aderyn?” George’s voice broke our eye contact and I was quick in getting myself away from him. I took few steps away from him and faced George who was looking Dylan with fearful eyes.

“I will be in your room” Dylan spoke and turned around to leave when I just nodded my head without even looking towards his direction.

Somehow I was feeling Shy?

However, for the last time I glanced his way only to find him glaring at George as if warning him to stay away from me.

George visibly gulped and Dylan walked back towards the room leaving us alone.

“Who is he? Is he your boyfriend? Is he a fighter too?” and I was bombarded with questions.

Greta shook her head and walked back towards the Kitchen while I escorted George towards the living room.

“No he is not a fighter” I said as I sat down on the sofa and ignored his previous question.

“What? You are lying. Didn’t you see how strong he was? He freaking hanged me into air just by lifting me as if I weighted a feather” he scoffed at me when I smiled.

“No he doesn’t fight. Just Gyming and all” I said and tried to change the topic.

“Anyways so what made you pay me a visit?” I asked and watched as his expression changed into a happy one.

“Oh I have a good news for you” he chirped.

“Is that so?” I asked to which he nodded.

“Well what is it then?”

“I have a proposal for you”

“Hmm” I hummed listening to him.

“We want to hire you as our fighter coach”

“What?”

“Yes. We want you to coach our international fighters”

“Uh me? But I thought that spot was for male fighters” I reasoned to which he scoffed.

“Uh C’mon Aderyn. Male fighters? We all saw what a female fighter could do back that day when she won the match against men” he said as he adjusted his jacket.

“Ummm” I thought.

Was I interested?

“So what is your answer? Don’t worry about the money. You will paid handsomely. Just say yes to this” he looked excited.

“Umm I don’t know. I never thought about it. I have other plans actually” I said. I was sure I didn’t want to get back into that world again.

“Oh no! Don’t say like that Aderyn” his face fell and I gave him a small smile.

“Okay I will give you some time to think. Think about it Aderyn because you could be the youngest Coach in history who will be training International level fighters. You will get famous and rich plus you will get chances to tour around the world”

I nodded taking in his words. But somehow I wasn’t interested. I never thought about that. I just want a peaceful life.

“Hmm I will think about it” I replied and he gave me a small smile.

“Alright then. Think as much as you want. I will be waiting. But I hope you give me a positive reply” his eyes shone with hope and I gave him a small smile.

“Okay I gotta leave now. I am flying off to Barcelona today. So need to pack my things” he said as he stood up and I followed his action.

“So soon? Why don’t you join me for lunch” I said to which he shooked his head negatively.

“No thank you. I have already done my lunch and I just want to get away as soon as possible because” he looked back towards the room where Dylan went.

“I am literally afraid of your boyfriend” he said and a small laugh cracked out of my mouth.

“Don’t tell anyone” he said in a whisper and I laughed nodding.

“Yeah Okay!”

“Okay Gotta go”

“Yeah! Bye”

“I will call you regarding your answer” he said while I opened the door for him.

“Okay!” I said and waved him a little after saying our Goodbyes.

“Go Pack!” I heard Dylan standing in the living room with a void expression.

“Urgh Not again” I snapped as I walked angrily back to my room.

I am not going anywhere.

*****

Chapter 37

Dylan Pov

“What in the world is wrong with me?” I whispered as I looked myself into the mirror.

Back there, I just lost my control over myself. Damn only the mere thought of other male doesn’t matter if it is a human or werewolf angers me.

I can not stand any other male touching whats mine. Aderyn is my mate and she is mine.

I would’ve killed that man out there if Aderyn didn’t stop me in the right time.

“Damn! You can’t just loose your control over yourself. You are a King” I spoke to myself through the mirror.

Finally I splashed some water on my face and wiped it using a towel and walked out of the bathroom to her bedroom.

Her scent filled my nose and I felt myself getting even more relaxed. I inhaled her smell and sat on her bed.

I could hear what they were talking downstairs.

Something about her being a coach.

“Hmm interesting!” I said and fell back on my back listening to there conversation.

“She doesn’t seem interested” I said to myself when I heard her not giving him positive reply.

I got up from the bed and looked around her room.

It was a simple yet modern room with a Queen sized bed, attached bathroom, a wardrobe, a long body height mirror attached to the wall. The walls were painted purple and beige. An art of a woman holding a pen on her lips was drawn on her wall behind her bed.

Two photo frames were hanged on the wall and I got up from the bed walking to it. One was her family photo, in which she looked very small sitting with her family members on a beach. The other one was her winning a match holding a cup.

I frowned a little when I took in the photo. What got my attention was a woman behind her looking at her in a weird way. Not bad but not even good way.

That woman looked confused and lost in thoughts as she looked at my Aderyn.

“Woah! My Aderyn? Where does that come from?” I composed myself and took a step back looking at that woman behind Aderyn suspicioulsy. No one could’ve ever noticed her there but my werewolf sight helped me in this.

I shrugged it off when I heard that man whose name was George living but not before joking that He is afraid of me which made Aderyn laugh.

I rolled my eyes on this.

“Ofcourse who would’nt?” I thought and walked down to find her closing the door.

She turned around and I found myself speaking “Go pack!” to which she rolled her eyes and then screamed “Urg not again!”

Then she marched past me mumbling “I am not going anywhere”.

I was being desperate now. I wanted her to go back with me to my home. But she just doesn’t understand.

I followed her to her room where I found her raising her top which means she was going to change but she stopped mid air with her bare hips on my view.

“What are you doing? Get out” she screamed but I wasn’t able to take in her words. The only thing which was visible to me was her bare skin.

“Mate!” I growled

“What?” She looked confused.

“Mine!” in a second I was before her making her gasp.

“What the-” she stood their shocked, her brown orbs looking at me, calling me to her.

My teeth began to change into canines, while my fingers itched to turn into claws. My wolf wanted to take control. He wanted his mate desperately. I tried hard to push him back, it was becoming very hard to control him. It was like standing in cliff when someone is pushing you from backwards and you trying hard not to fall.

“M-Mate!” My beast talked.

“Dylan?” Aderyn looked frightened.

“Come to me my Mate” he talked as he asked Aderyn to come to him, to us.

I knew his intentions already. He wanted to mark Aderyn and I couldn’t let that happen. Aderyn needs to know about all this first and before I mark her I want her permission. She should accept me first then I will take the next step.

“Dylan?” Aderyn took a step near me.

“Yes Come to me” my wolf spoked getting even more impatient. He knew I was stopping him so he was using me and his mate bond to make Aderyn near him.

“Dylan?” She took another step.

“N-No” the human side of me forced.

Aderyn stopped on her track and eyed me with worriedness.

“Dylan are you alright?” She asked slowly and took a step back probably when she saw my eyes color changing.

“No Aderyn don’t come near me” I said and my wolf growled at me.

“Mate! Come to me” my wolf spoke and forcefully widened its arms for Aderyn.

“Dylan?” Aderyn looked very confused. She was in dilemma whether she should come to us or not.

“I will never hurt you my beautiful Mate” Black spoke making me scoff.

“Oh really? So what are you doing now?” I screamed on him internally.

“I want my mate and you stay out of it you human” He growled and forced himself on me.

“Stop it! You will hurt her” I screamed

“No! I will never hurt my mate” he screamed and growled even more.

“Then look at her right now. See what you have done” I yelled and my wolf towards her to find her looking scared of us. Though she held her confidence and stood strong but her eyes showed fear.

She is a human after all. She would’ve never saw such a beastly sight before her.

“No!” my wolf cried looking at Aderyn.

“Don’t fear me my mate!” he began to loose control on my body and before he could control my body again I forced myself and took control.

“I am not fearing you” my Aderyn spoke.

“We know” we said at the same time and my wolf lost control. I knelt down on my knees and held the side of the bed for support. I huffed out air and took deep breaths to steady myself.

It took lots of energy to regain the control over my body.

“Dylan are you alright?” Aderyn was quick to get to me. She sounded worried and I couldn’t see her as I was still huffing looking downwards. She touched my tensed shoulder and rubbed it soothingly.

“Dy-” She was cut off when I pulled her to me and wrapped my arms around her waist and another holding her back side of her head.

Damn! My wolf hasn’t lost its control yet.

“Mine!” He growled as he took in the creamy skin on Aderyn’s neck. His eyes roamed on her and he pulled Aderyn even more closer making her gasp.

Aderyn tried to push him but her efforts were of no use.

My wolf lowered its head down and touched Aderyn’s skin with its nose, sniffing her scent.

His chest vibrated as he growled appreciating the lovely smell.

He opened his mouth and licked its canines ready to mark his mate but a whimper made him stop.

“Dylan” He stopped when he heard Aderyn’s voice and raised its head looking at her face.

Her face was just mere inch apart from him. If anything he want was only to kiss his mate and mark her his but the human side of him which was me was trying to stop him with great difficulties.

“Dylan” a tear slipped down Aderyn’s beautiful face and it was how I was back fully. My wolf lost its control fully over my body and he whimpered seeing Aderyn’s frightened face.

She watched as my eyes turned back to its original color and my features turning to its original human shape. As she saw me, the human side the fear in her eyes subsided and she looked relieved that I was back.

“ThanK God Dylan you are ba-” she gasped when I tightened the hold on her hair.

It doesn’t matter if I was in my wolf’s control or in my human form she was still our mate. It was becoming hard for me to resist her. She was an attractive woman. Very attractive, strong and fiesty. Her confidence attracted me even more.

“Dyla-” I spoke up hushing her.

“Ssh!” I said and she held the piece of cloth on my chest steadying herself.

I lowered myself down not able to control myself any longer. My heart beat raced and I could hear her heart beat rising even more.

She knew what I was going to do and what I wanted. She could have stopped me but she didn't for which I also didn't stop myself any longer.

I closed the gap between us and finally touched her inviting lips, with mine. She didn't react. I brushed her lips with mine at first but then began to kiss her. It was a new feeling. I could feel sparkings and tingles running over my skin as I grew even more hungry for her.

The mate bond was working.

She didn't respond. So, I tightened my grips on her body and tilted my head to get more access as I kissed her hungrily and passionately. Soon she began to respond and she held my shirt even more tightly kissing me back.

It was growing even more tempting as we kissed each other even more passionately. I knew the mate bond was working on her too. She wanted me as much I wanted her but I knew she was confused. She was confused on why she was doing this.

Well I will explain all of this to her later so I concentrated on her more and bit down on her bottom lips asking for entrance. She didn't respond but when I was sure she would give me my permission, breaking of glasses was heard by two of us and followed by it some curses.

Immediately Aderyn came back to her senses and pulled herself away from me. I loosened my grip on her let her go. Her eyes were widened and I noticed the glowing tint of pink rising her cheek. She looked shocked and at the same time flushed.

"Oh no!" I heard Greta shouting from downstairs.

She probably broke something.

Aderyn came back to senses and averted her gaze shying away from me. She pushed herself up and stood up running out of the room.

While she ran away I leaned against the bed and looked towards the door where she just ran away.

A smile broke on my face as I touched my lips which were still tingling due to the incident that happened just few seconds ago.

****

Chapter 38

Aderyn Pov

“What the hell just happened?” I muttered while I walked down the stairs.

“I kissed him?”

“Did I seriously Kiss him?” I questioned to myself and touched my lips which were still tingling because of that kiss.

“And I don’t even regret it?” I racked a hand through my hair confused.

I would have killed that person who would have kissed me like that but here I was enjoying kissing Dylan and I don’t even regret doing that.

“Oh Aderyn I am so sorry” I heard Greta and I looked towards her to find her standing near the broken crockery.

Not just Crockery but very costly Crockery which I brought from France last year. My Crockery are very special to me and I just love them. I would shout at anyone who did any harm to it and here Greta has broken my favorite one.

“Greta move aside you will hurt your feet” I told her and watched as she looked at me shocked and I was shocked too.

What the hell am I saying?

“Ad-Aderyn are you alright?” She asked dazed.

“Of course. Now move aside you will seriously hurt your feet” I said and she nodded moving aside.

“Uh I am so sorry I broke your favorite cro-” she was cut off by Dylan “Don’t worry I will buy a new one for her” my heart beat raced against my chest hearing him.

I looked back and found him standing on the stairs. I looked at him with wide eyes and as soon as his eyes met mine, the whole incident that happened few minutes ago flashed back before me and I felt my cheeks burning from it so before he could see me blushing, I turned around and looked the other side clearly hiding myself from Greta.

“I need to clean it before any one gets hurt” Greta said and walked towards the store room to bring the cleaning materials.

I nodded and walked back to the living room where I switched on the Tv and flipped channels. It stopped on a show called "Just for laugh gags".

I loved that show. A smile broke onto my face and I walked backward to sit on my sofa.

"If you wanted to do it so badly then the only thing you needed to do was just to tell me" I jolted up back but his arm which was wrapped around my waist stopped me from doing so.

Unintentionally, yes unintentionally I sat on his lap. I was walking backwards so I didn't know that he was sitting there.

"What are you doing? Let me go" I snapped and he let me go.

I stood up and turned around glaring at him.

"If you were sitting there and you saw me walking backwards then why the hell you didn't stop me?"

He shrugged and smirked crossing his arms across his chest.

"Maybe I didn't want you to stop" he said and immediately I blushed hearing him.

I turned around saying a quiet "Whatever" to him and sat on the other sofa watching the show.

As I was watching the show I felt his stares on my body.

"Watch the show not me" I snapped not even looking at him because I knew he was looking at me. Peripheral Vision.

"Well I am watching the show" he said and I looked at him to find him already looking at me.

"Well you clearly don't" I said which made him raise his eyebrows.

"So how did you know I was watching you and not the show?" he asked and I gulped biting on my tongue.

"Oh don't tell me your attention was on me" he had this smug look on this face which I seriously wanted to wipe out of his face with a kick.

"Shut up" I said and looked back at the Tv.

"Its already half past Two Aderyn when are you going to pack?" He asked when we were having our lunch.

"Again?" I glared at him.

"How many times I have to tell you that I am not going anywhere?" I said and stuffed a mouthful of my chicken into my mouth.

He narrowed his eyes on me and then concentrated back on his food.

I raised an eyebrow on this.

“Weird! He didn’t argue this time. Looks like I won” I thought and smirked thinking about the chances of me winning.

“Eat your food” he said out of nowhere while I was smirking.

“Eating” I snapped and continued eating my food.

“Greta where is that?” He asked when we were done eating.

“Where is what?” I asked getting confused. I didn’t have any Idea upon what he was talking about.

“Oh I will just serve it” Greta told us as she wiped her mouth using the tissue and went inside the kitchen.

I sat on my chair waiting for her.

She came back holding a tray.

“Chocolate smoothie?” I asked looking at the creamy smoothie. It was my favorite.

“He asked me to make this” Greta told us as she gestured towards Dylan and served us our glass.

“Well I asked you because I wanted to drink it. You didn’t need to make it for her. You could have just made only for two” he shrugged and took his glass drinking from it.

“Oh Shut up!” I glared at him and drank my smoothie enjoying each sip.

It was my favorite drink after all.

After I finished my drink, I helped Greta washing the dishes while Dylan went somewhere. The whole time I was washing the dishes Greta kept on looking at me weirdly. I gave her a look and she averted her gaze away doing some other work.

“Okay I am done here” I said as I set the plates back on its place.

“I am going out for a walk” I said as I wiped the water out of my hand using a cloth.

“Are you feeling alright?” She asked out of nowhere and I gave her a look.

“Of course I am feeling good. Why? Am I not supposed to feel good?” I questioned suspiciously and she gulped audibly.

Her action made me even suspicious.

“What is it Greta?” I asked as I threw the cloth on the table.

“Nothing. Its just you went through so much in just a day so I was worried” she said and I nodded.

Maybe I was exaggerating.

There is nothing for which I need to get all suspicious upon Greta.

“Oh! No I am fine” I said and I gave her a small smile.

“Hey! Come here” she said and I went into her arms resting my head on her shoulder.

I was feeling little tired somehow.

“I know you are a brave child” she said as she rubbed her palms on my back.

“Hmm” I hummed.

“I know you have gone through so much in your life Child. And I think you should open up now. Its time that you let someone in so that he could heal you” she said and I remained silent listening to her.

“You need to stop being so strong dear. You need to loose yourself sometimes so that someone could keep a hand on your shoulder and tell you that everything will be alright. Because at the end you always need that someone who will give you tha-” I cut her off because I knew where this was going.

“Greta. I am fine” I said as I pulled myself back and kept my hands on her shoulder.

“And moreover I have you” I said and pinched her nose.

“I don’t need to worry for anything as long as I have you” I said and she opened her mouth to speak “But I -” I cut her off again “Mmmm Greta! I am Fine” I said and smiled at her.

“Now don’t worry so much” I said and before she could open her mouth I kissed her cheek and walked out of the kitchen room.

“I am going for a walk” I shouted as I draped my shawl and walked out from the back door towards the sea.

Its been a long time since I walked like this for a walk.

Alone.

“Sometimes I feel Alone. Really Alone. And I think that maybe Greta is actually right but then I am back being to my usual one. Strong and determined” I talked to myself as I walked towards the sea.

The waves hitting my foot and I felt relaxed after walking on that warm sand. The water felt really cold and I closed my eyes enjoying my own little time feeling the waves and breeze hitting my face.

“You again!” I said as I felt a presence behind me.

Somehow I knew who exactly the person behind me was.

“Thought to give you some company” his husky voice came from behind me and I sighed opening my eyes.

“Well maybe I wanted to be alone” I said and felt him walking beside me.

“Or maybe you did need a company” he said and I looked towards him to find him standing beside me wearing a blue ripped jeans and for the first time I saw him wearing a white V neck t-shirt. His hands were shoved inside his pant pockets as he looked up towards the sea in a calm look.

“I didn’t knew that you wear other color other than black” I said and he looked down at me scowling at me.

“Of course I do have” he said and looked at his shirt.

I smiled at this and looked back towards the ocean.

“How did you know that I was here?” I asked.

“I can always find you wherever you are” he said and I nodded half mindfully listening to him.

“I heard what Greta said back there” he said and I hummed in response. I was feeling tired now. Very tired.

“You should listen to her. I think she is right” I heard him say and I closed my eyes listening to him.

“Hmmm” I hummed in response.

I wanted to tell him that I was fine alone but I kept my mouth shut because I felt my energy draining out of my body.

“You should let me in”

“At least give me a chance” I frowned hearing him say all those.

Was he seriously saying all those things or was I dreaming?

“But in all those things I know one thing. I am not giving up on you. I am not leaving you. I am taking you back with me. It doesn’t matter that you want to go or not. I am taking you with me. I am not letting you alone ever” he said and that was when I lost my balance and I began to fall backwards but stopped mid air when he wrapped his hands around me stopping me from falling.

“Like I said before” he said as he scooped me up into his arms “I am not giving up on you” I could hear him and slowly I began to loose my senses.

“I don’t know about you. But I-” he stopped mid sentence and that is when I felt something on my forehead and then he completed his sentence “For remaining strong, I need you” I heard him and his last sentences remained ringing inside my head in a whisper as I slowly drifted into darkness.

“I need you”.

I need you.

****

Chapter 39

Aderyn Pov

My eyes opened a little bit and I could see a room. Everything was blurry to me and I was feeling sleepy. I didn't wanted to go back to sleep yet my body gave up and I found myself slipping back into darkness.

I groaned feeling thirsty and tried to stretch my hands towards the nightstand in search of water bottle. I always keep a water bottle before sleeping. I found none. Groaning, I tried to open my eyes. It was still heavy. As soon as I opened my eyes it shut itself back immediately affected by the light coming from the curtains. I rubbed the back of my hand on my eyes and slowly tried to open them again adjusting to the surrounding and it is then when I noticed.

"It is not my room" I found myself talking to myself.

I looked around and to my utmost surprise, I found myself back in the room in none other than Dylan's house.

"Oh my lord!"

Quickly getting myself out of the bed I ran towards the window and looked outside.

"Same place".

"Shit! What just happened? How did I get here?"

I couldn't remember anything. So, I tried to remember what could have happen.

The first scene that came into my mind was Dylan kissing me. I blushed remembering it. So I shook my head getting myself on track. Then we had our lunch, then I went for a walk. I was feeling sleepy while I was walking. I remember the last thing and I opened my eyes raking a head through my messy hair.

And the last thing I remember was Dylan standing next to me.

"You got to be kidding me" I laughed incredulously.

He drugged me just to bring me back here.

"How dare he?" I muttered and stormed off to get some sense into his thick skull.

Dashing towards his room which I remembered from the last time I came here I tied my messy hair into a messy bun using the band from my hand and wiped my face angrily.

When I reached his room I was about to knock and when I thought why to show etiquette when he himself doesn't have any idea how to behave with other person. So I stormed into his room and what I found angered me even more.

There in the middle of the bed he slept sprawled and tangled with his sheets soundlessly. His bare back on display as he slept only wearing his trousers.

I wanted to run to him and jump on his back wanting to give him a sore back but I controlled myself. That would be too childish. I took deep breaths in and out closing my eyes to calm my anger and then I opened them thinking that I was relaxed but as soon as his face came into my view all my calmness went out of the room and I practically ran to his bed wanting to at least scratch his face.

I was just about to hit his back when out of nowhere he caught my hand without even opening his eyes catching me off-guard.

"Let go!" I tried to free my hand using my other hand.

He didn't respond nonetheless tightened his hold on my hand and turned around from his position. I was pulled forward but I balanced myself using my other hand keeping it on the bed.

I tried to wiggle my hand trying to free myself which only caused his hold to tighten even more.

And then I stopped. I waved a hand over his face thinking whether he was still asleep or was he awake. It was my wrong move. Because the next moment he caught hold of my free hand which I was waving making me gasp and the next moment I was pulled towards him.

My heart raced against my chest and I gulped inaudibly somehow feeling little nervous. I hovered right above his face. I was scared.

Slowly his eyes fluttered open and he blinked a few times before looking straight into my eyes.

And then he smirked.

"I like this position" he said in his husky voice pulling me even closer.

I scowled at him and pulled myself up wiggling my hands.

"Let me go" I screamed frustrated.

"Well you were the one who came into my room and to me" I heard the last part in whisper as he suddenly turned around and got up from his sleeping position and sat on his knees still not leaving my hand, crossing them over each other because of his sitting position.

"What the hell do you think you are doing? Leave me" I wiggled my hands to me but he pulled it back to him and gave me one of his amusing smile which irritated me even more.

I stopped wiggling and closed my eyes trying to control my anger.

“Okay! Fine! Now let go” I asked as politely I could thinking that he might let go of my hands.

To my annoyance he shook his head negatively infuriating me even more.

“You asked for it” I screamed as I bite down hard on his wrist.

I was thinking that he would leave me instantly but when I looked at him through my eyelashes, I found not a single threat of pain on his face instead he looked with an exhilarated face.

I bite down even hard to the extent where I could feel metallic taste in my mouth which made me to leave his wrist immediately. He looked completely unaffected by what I just did. I freaking bite him and he was completely unaffected.

I saw the bite mark and scratches from my teeth which started to heal right before my eyes but the teeth mark was still there.

“Should I take this as the fact that you just marked me?” his husky voice brought me out of my thoughts.

“What?” I asked confused.

“Then it should be alright right if I mark you right here and now?” He asked before pulling me to him freeing my hands and grabbing the back of my neck puling my head down by my hair exposing my neck before him.

“What are you a vampire?” I asked as I pushed his chest trying to free myself. He laughed on this making me freeze on my spot. He was laughing. Truly laughing. His eyes twinkled as he laughed and his chest vibrated while I watched him shocked seeing him laugh for the first time.

“I am better than that” he spoke in between his laughs and out of nowhere placed a kiss on my throat making me shiver.

“Not today” I heard him whisper and he let go of me. I took this as the chance and jumped back from the bed wanting to stay away from him as much as I could. As I stood near the bed post wiping the place where he just kissed and glared at him for making me forget for what I reason I came into his room, he placed some pillows against the bed headboard and sat leaning against it, throwing the hand which I just bite down over his head.

“So what made you come all the way to my room? Not that I mind” he questioned.

The nerve of him.

“What the hell am I doing here?” I asked throwing a pillow on him which he caught easily and kept it on his chest.

“What do you mean?” He asked and gave me a grin which was... which was different from the grin he usually did. A coquettish grin. He gave me a coquettish grin.

“Wh-What the hell is wrong with you?” I stammered a little.

He raised his eyebrows questionably.

“Ugh. Why are you behaving like this?” I asked frustrated.

“Like what?” he questioned looking amused.

I licked my lips which caused him to look towards my lips.

“Li-Like this” I waved my hand before him and me trying to give him my point.

“I still don’t get you Aderyn” he crossed his legs giving me an gave me a look like he had no clue on what I was talking.

“Like why are you grinning like that?” I yelled crossing my hands over my chest.

“Is there even a type of grin?” he asked

“Yes there is. And you just gave me a coquettish grin” I kept my point.

“No I didn’t”

“Yes Yo-”

“It wasn’t coquettish, it was kittenish” He shrugged his shoulders blinking his eyes on me to which I gave him an incredulous look huffing out air.

What the...

“Are we playing word games here? stop distracting me. You freaking drugged me?” I accused him to which he just shrugged.

“You didn’t leave me any other option” he stated calmly as a matter of fact.

“What part of me not wanting to come back did you not understand?” I yelled

“Why are not understanding this simple fact that I don’t want to do anything with yo-” he didn’t let me finish “Enough”.

“What?”

“Enough now. You are here now and you are my mate”

I threw my hands in the air “Again with all this mate thing”.

“Whether you like it or not you have to be here. Beside me so that I could protect you”

“Dylan I don’t want you to protect me. I can take care of myself perfectly fine. If you are forgetting then let me remind you I grew up without anyone’s help just by myself. It was only me. So I can ensure you that I can take care of myself” I yelled at him.

“I can live alone. It’s not that I like living alone but I am already habituated of it and you are invading my personal space Dylan and I don’t like it”.

I huffed out air and waited for him to speak but he remained rooted to his position watching me calmly and then he spoke “You need to change that”.

I gave him a confused look.

“Habits can be changed”.

“You don’t need to live alone when I am there for you”.

He took his hand which I previously bit, to his mouth placing a kiss on it as I watched him with an accelerated heart and with widening eyes.

“Stop being so stubborn and for once let me in” his eyes reflecting his sincerity.

As I was walking back to my room his words remained echoing in my head and I found myself determined to go away from him. Because if I didn’t stay away from him then I could possibly risk myself into the worst which I could ever think of.

And that is risk of falling in love with him.

*****

Chapter 40

Aderyn Pov

Run.

Run as fast as your feet could take you, just run.

“I am a little disappointed that you didn’t even consider talking to me or anyone of us before running away from us”.

Blake spoke to me looking upset and his eyes reflecting his sad feelings. And the fact that I was the reason of his sadness made me even more keen onto escape this place as soon as possible.

“Luna please stop!” I heard someone from behind me and I knew I was nothing compared to their supernatural strength so I did what my brain told me was correct to do. They need to stop not me. So I turned a corner and ran as fast as I could towards the door. I just wanted to escape this place as soon as I can.

Earlier Blake, Cole, Jenny and Bella came to meet me. They looked beyond happy to meet me but soon as I was bombarded with their questions.

Why did you leave?

You are our Luna.

You are supposed to protect us right?

We will protect you no matter what.

You are our family.

We are your family.

You are so strong. You faced so much difficulties in your life yet you always remain happy. You are our perfect Luna.

You deserve to be our Queen.

Why did you leave?

Did we hurt you?

If we did then it was purely unintentional.

We can never hurt our Luna.

Please don't leave us.

We need you.

Alpha needs you.

Then and there I knew that if I stayed here any longer my life would not be the same. Ever.

I will be loaded with responsibilities.

I was a lone bird. I was independent. And taking responsibilities means people will remain depended upon you. And the last time I took a responsibility I was rewarded with the end of my sister's life. I am scared now.

I couldn't save her. I loved her so much.

I love these people too. No matter what they are I always felt a connection between them and me. A strong connection. If anything ever happened to them then I wouldn't survive. I can not bear to loose anymore that I love. That is the reason why I never made close friends. I never opened up to anyone. Because I knew I would soon develop a liking towards them and at the end I would always be the one to get hurt.

So it is better if I stay away.

I am like a jinx. I don't want mine jinx fate to cause any trouble to the people that I love.

"Luna!" I heard another guy shouting for me but I didn't stop running.

So after they went away my mind was kept fluctuating between should I stay or not. Latter I choose not to stay. It was for the betterment of the people around me.

It loos like Dylan was serious when he told me that he wouldn't let me go. True to his words he had his werewolves guarding the place through where I escaped the last time. So, the only way left to escape this place was the indirect way. The back side of the house. There must be a place to get out.

Yes, I am coward that I am running away. I don't have enough courage to face any more people's life in line to Death.

"Please wait!" All of a sudden a guy came infront of me trying to stop me. He tried to hold me but in one moment I flipped him over me and continued running.

"Sorry" I yelled. No matter what I couldn't hurt anyone from here.

"Aderyn!"

It was Blake.

“Aderyn wait!”

“Aderyn listen to me” he yelled.

But I was keen on escaping. I wanted to escape this place by any means. So, avoiding him I ran.

Soon I could see the door to the backside. I smirked and ran even faster dodging the people who came in front of me to stop me.

Opening the door I ran outside only to be disappointed to find no back entrance but only 15 foot long wall.

I stopped on my tracks and looked around frantically searching for any door or something from where I could escape. But found none.

“Luna” I heard Cole’s voice and turned around to find everyone means literally everyone running my way.

“Crap” I said through gritted teeth.

“Please stop” he said as Blake and the others joined him.

“Alpha is on his way. Well There’s no way she can leave now” Blake spoke as he looked behind me towards the wall.

I looked back towards the wall and its when my eyes fell on what I wanted.

I turned around and smirked at them.

Cole narrowed his eyes at me while Blake gave me a puzzled look. Before they can find what I saw, I turned around and took some steps back and then did the running start and lunged towards the wall and jumped into the air and using all my upper body strength, clawed the top of the wall and sticking my foot on the wall pulled myself up.

“Aderyn!” I heard Cole’s disbelieving voice.

I climbed the top and stood on the wall dusting my palms on my pant and looked at there disbelieving face chuckling to myself.

And before anybody could do anything I turned around jumped not caring about the height, not caring where I was going to fall.

I was expecting thorns or bushes but I landed on heaps of leaves.

“Smooth landing” I spoke to myself as I dusted my hair and my top once I reached down landing safely on my feet.

I looked back at the wall and then towards the woods.

“Now what?” I huffed looking towards the woods.

Taking a minute to decide on what to do, I finally decided upon going in there completely going against my own intuition I headed into the dark woods.

I took a slow start at first but then ran using my full speed.

I remember Blake saying Alpha is on his way.

Earlier, I took the risk to run away because I heard that Dylan was out to somewhere. So judging by the time he went away he must be pretty far away. And if I continued running like this then I was sure there would be no way ever for him to track me.

I would be leaving the country as soon as possible but for that I need to find the main road where I could take some passenger by’s help.

I ran more into the woods. I didn’t have any idea where I was going but I didn’t care.

I knew I was being a coward and selfish bitch by running away but the responsibilities that I was loaded with was far more than burdensome and depressing for me than anything else. I wasn’t ready for such loads on my shoulders.

As I ran and ran, soon I began to slow down tired. I jogged a little and finally stopped on my tracks panting and huffing. I took deep intakes and exhaled loudly tired. I could feel my blood thumping against my skin and my heart beating wildly.

After a minute, when my heart was normal I walked ahead and looked up towards the sky. The scorching heat of the sun and all that running making my throat dry. I walked and tried to look for any source that could ease my thirst.

Finally I heard something. Realising what it could be I ran. Going deep inside the woods, jumping over bushes I reached the place.

A Stream.

I felt ecstatic seeing the stream. I ran to it and kneeled down on the bank and using my palms to fill water I drank the cold water which immediately gave me relief from my thirst and I sighed contented sitting at the bed of the river.

Something caught my eyes and I looked towards my front to see a shadow of something. Slowly the shadow began to emerge out from the woods and then it was when I realised that it was wolf.

Not just some wolf but a black wolf with a white diamond like tattoo on its forehead, with familiar green eyes and the most part was it was way too much bigger than a normal wolf. It was the same wolf whom I saw in my dream.

It emerged out of the woods and stood at the other side of the stream facing me, looking at me. I found myself dumbstruck. I couldn't move as if I was paralysed on my spot. Though I felt scared I tried my best not to freak out. It was way too larger than a normal wolf.

It looked directly into my eyes and than sat down on its hind legs watching me. Then it took its ear back and bent down drinking water from the stream.

Whenever I would make a move to get up it would look up at me and would glare at me.

The problem was I didn't had any weapon with me and I couldn't fight a wolf. All my trainings and fighting skills were useless against an animal. And I never hurt any animal. I loved animals.

It stood up from where it was sitting and then began wiggle its tail looking at me. And Before I could register what I happening I found the black coloured wolf right before my eyes. Only a centimetre away from my eyes.

It jumped across the stream and stood before. My heart raced against my chest rapidly. I was failing myself from to do something.

It began to sniff me and I decided to stay still if I didn't wanted to be eaten by a wild wolf. Soon it growled lowly and bent down licking my hand which was full if scratches due to running through bushes and tree branches.

"Hey! Stop" I managed to speak confused on what it was doing.

It ignored me and continued licking my wounds. And when it stopped I found myself gawking at it.

There were no wounds left. It was healed. I looked up shocked at the wolf who healed my wounds like a miracle.

I couldn't believe my own eyes.

The wolf began to wiggle its tail and began to lick my face.

I laughed a little trying to push it away from my face. It wasn't hurting me in any way but it was healing me.

Soon it stopped and gathering confidence I lifted my hands up and stroked its fur and patted its head.

It leaned into my touch and wiggled its tail even more. I chuckled at its behavior.

The wolf stopped wiggling its tail and began to walk past me towards the woods behind me.

“Hey! Stop. Where are you going?” I asked it but it didn’t stop instead it went into the woods. I got up from my place and turned around towards the way where it went.

The wolf went inside the woods disappearing from my sight.

As I frowned at it, I heard a twig snapping and looked up to find a human coming out of the woods. But what surprised me was It was no other human but Dylan who was coming out of the woods, only wearing a jeans which hung low on his waist and what made me nervous was the fact that he looked damn upset.

*****

Chapter 41

Aderyn Pov

“What’s with you always running away?” He asked as he walked towards me. The more he came closer the more nervous I grew and I hated it.

“Well a captive do have right to run away from its captor” I told him and he sighed rubbing his hand on his face.

“I am not your captor Aderyn. I am your mate. How many times do I need to tell you this?” He asked and I turned around avoiding his gaze.

“I saw a wolf” I spoke and heard him humming in response.

“It was way too bigger than a normal one” I told him and stood their silently for some minutes before speaking again “Was it you?” I asked and turned towards my side to face him.

He nodded reluctantly and shoved his hands into his pant pockets.

“He is the King. His name is Black” he told me and I nodded and pursed my lips.

“I saw him once before” I told him to which he gave me confused look.

“I never shifted into him nor did I ever showed my wolf form to you beforehand. So how and where did you see him?” He questioned and I smiled to it remembering where I met him.

“In my dream” I told him and looked up at him to find him already staring at me.

“What was he doing there?” He asked and shook my head negatively which made him frown.

“I will never tell you that” I said and sat down on one of the stone placing my leg inside a puddle of water.

He took his seat on another stone before me and copied my action.

“Black is beautiful” I told him and he smiled looking the other side.

“He is glad that his mate finds him beautiful” He spoke and I lowered my head hearing the word mate.

“How did you find me? I thought you were away to somewhere” I asked unasked question that I wanted to ask the time I saw him emerging out of the woods.

“I already told you, I can find you easily even if you went to the other side of the world. Nothing could ever stop me from finding you. I could always feel and sense you” he told me and I felt my heart fluttering hearing him. I felt truth laced in his words.

“So you are not going to yell at me or something for running away?” I asked and he looked at me and then chuckled. He took some pebbles and started throwing them one by one into the water.

“No I am not going to yell” he told me to which I raised my eyes questionably.

“Why?”

“Because I know why you ran away” he said and I gave him a blank look.

“When I was hardly seventeen I was to be crowned for my position. The day I was to be crowned, do you know what I did?” He asked and I shook my head negatively.

“I ran away” he blurted out and I blinked my eyes processing what he just told me.

“What?” I asked not believing him.

He heaved a sigh and using his hands he leaned back looking up towards the sky.

“Although I won the battle from our enemies to win my kingdom back, I was still a kid and it was too much for me to take a responsibility. I was under pressure. I was scared what if I failed my father, my people, my King who was my father” he spoke lowly the two words and I noticed the sadness which marred his face.

Perhaps recalling those days or maybe his father.

“It was too much for me. I knew my life would no longer be the same after I take the responsibility. I too wanted my freedom. Responsibility was killing me. People were looking at me with hope that I will be protecting them and the kingdom”.

“So at last I ran away” he gave me a small smile but I could see the sadness in his eyes.

“I ran and ran into this woods” he smiled looking everywhere “This same woods and finally ended up here. Right here in this stream” he smiled recalling the day.

“I was tired and frustrated. I just wanted a break from my life. I had already lot of things full in my plate and the crown weighted the most on me. It felt like a burden to me. I knew if I wore it, I had to bear it at any cost”.

“Finally I decided that I would run away. Run away to a place where nobody could ever find me” he stopped for a minute and exhaled loudly as he kept his head on his knee.

“Then?” I asked wanting to know more.

He looked at me and smiled “I didn’t do that”.

“I would’ve ran away if I didn’t hear his voice”.

“Whose voice?” I asked confused.

“It was Arald” he said and as soon he said that his face was marred by a sad expression which made me worried.

“Arald was my Father’s Beta” he said in a gloomy tone and then it clicked me.

“Beta? but I thought he die-” I stopped in the middle with widen eyes.

“I’m so sorry. I didn’t mean” I apologized feeling terrible for saying that out loud.

“No it’s okay”.

“I don’t mind”.

“Yes it is true that he died in that war but still I heard his voice”.

“I was sure that the voice which I heard belonged to his and that day I was shocked after hearing him. It was like a magic to me. After hearing him, I got strength. He told me to go back and to fulfill my duties of being a King. I was a King and instead of running away like a coward I was suppose to fight back. I had to hold on to my responsibilities and duties of being a King. It was what the Moon Goddess wanted, our senior wanted, our kingdom wanted and most importantly it was what my Father always dreamed of. His only wish was to see his son getting crowned but fate had something else decided for him”.

“He didn’t even get the chance to say goodbye to his son, let alone see him grow up” he told that and I could see his eyes getting watery but as to prevent hi,self from crying he closed his eyes and inhaled and exhaled deeply and when he opened his eyes he looked at me. No matter how much he tried to keep his face void from any emotion, I could steel see the pain which was still there, evident from his eyes.

“You said you heard him. How?” I asked trying to change the subject.

“I don’t know. I still think that may be I was hallucinating or something but I was pretty sure that it was his voice which I heard”.

“After that I got a hold upon myself and finding my strength and confidence I went against the plan of running away and decided to return to where I rightly belonged to”.

“My Kingdom”.

“I was a King and for me to act like a coward was forbidden”.

He looked towards me with something in eyes that I couldn't quite comprehend so I averted my gaze away from him and looked elsewhere.

"Do you know why I am telling you this?" He asked softly and though I didn't answer him I somehow knew why he was telling this to me.

"You know what?"

I looked back at him questionably.

"Till now nobody knew that I actually ran away that day. When it was the time for the announcement everyone found me where I should be and then I was given the throne. But nobody ever knew that before that I ran away".

"You are the only one whom I told this. This is the biggest secret of my life" he smiled at me to which my heart responded by beating rapidly.

"Because when I lost Arald I used to think that he was my only strength apart from my parents whom I lost in that war".

"But now, I think that I have found my strength back" he moved towards me and touched my face and began to trail his knuckles on my cheeks.

I grew nervous and though I wanted nothing but to lean against his touch I restrained myself from doing that. His touch did incredible things to my skin sending tingles and warmness running down my body.

"When are you going to stop holding yourself back from me?" he chuckled but I knew he was upset.

"You need to open up to me. It's not like I will eat you or something. And you need to warm up to me soon. Very very soon" he swept the locks that was falling my face behind my ear and came incredibly close to me and whispered into my ear.

"Because I don't think I could restrain myself from you any longer. Day by Day I am loosing my control and I don't think you running away from me every time is helping me. It is making me even more. Because I like to chase" he trailed a finger on my arm and using his another hand he held me by my waist and pulled me to him and put his head into the crook of my neck inhaling my scent.

"Heavenly" he whispered and I gulped remembering the last time what happened after he did that.

"And I will take my Luna back with me whether she comes with me willingly or by" he placed a soft kiss on my pulse which immediately set me on fire. I closed my eyes shut and took deep intakes to control myself.

“I won’t let my Luna out of my sight ever” he squeezed my waist and I clenched my fist feeling the nails digging my skin.

“Because She is my Strength and She is Mine”.

Chapter 42

Dylan Pov

I was out on a pack patrolling when Blake mind linked me telling me that Aderyn was trying to escape.

I asked them to catch her but warned everyone not to touch her. I knew Aderyn was smart but never knew that she would ever do a stupidity by jumping a fifteen feet wall. She was still a human and I didn't like the idea of her jumping a wall. What if something happened to her?

I knew it was not a big deal for her but for me it was more than a big deal. So I asked Blake to stop and not to follow her after she did that ridiculous jump. If they wanted they could've followed her and jumping a mere something feet long wasn't a big deal for werewolves. We could do much than that.

But still I asked them not to chase after her. Because it was me who was going to that. I'll be always be the one who will chase her. As soon as I enter my perimeter I stopped on my track and used my power.

Being able to control all type of elements was a blessing for me. I could control Earth, as well as do Telekinesis and there were many more.

I used my Nature power and Air to locate where she was. Finally, I got what I wanted. I could smell her. She was some miles away from me and I just needed to shift into my wolf form to reach her.

My Elemental powers were my blessings from my parents. They both possessed some elemental powers and I inherited it from them. But mine were more stronger than them. But there was only one problem.

If I am on locating a person by using my elemental powers and if it rains at the same time, my power fails. Its not like I can't use my power in the rain. I just can't locate a person in the rain.

Being able to control all elements is a curse sometimes. When it rains my powers seems to grow and the human side of me seems to grow weaker due to which my powers disable me from locating or feeling any person. This is mine one and only weakness.

Well apart from Aderyn.

She is has grown both to be my strength as well as weakness. I tend to loose my senses when I'm around her.

"Let's go back" I stood up and looked down at her waiting for her to stand up.

She kept staring at me and I smiled at her giving her my hand to take. Reluctantly she took my hand and stood up on her foot.

“Let’s walk back” I told her and turned around to leave but stopped when I saw her not moving an inch from her place.

“Aderyn?” I called.

“I don’t want to go back” she replied and I bit the inner side of my mouth and asked “Why?”

“I don’t know” she whispered and I stared at her face and then looked up at the sky.

“Are you scared?” I questioned. The question just came out of my mouth by itself.

I sighed thinking that these days there are lot of things that are coming out of my mouth by itself.

“Scared?” she asked and scoffed at me.

I smiled a little and looked the other way not wanting her to see my smile. I shoved my hands into my pockets and looked back towards her with a serious look asking “Then?”

She looked down and pursed her lips, her mouth forming into a thin line as she curled up her lower lips outwards and shrugged her shoulders “I just don’t know.”

I waited for her to say something but she didn’t I chose to spoke.

“Maybe I know the answer why you don’t want to go back” I told her and watched as her head shot up and she narrowed her eyes at me.

“Really?” she asked curiously.

I nodded and turned around on my feet and walked back in the woods.

“Hey! Wait!” I heard her shouting for me. I smiled at it and heard her footsteps behind me. The breaking of twigs, the crunching sound of leaves was clearly audible to me as she ran before me to catch up with me.

“Tell me!” she asked with curiosity evident in her voice.

“Tell what?” I thought of paying a little with her.

She glared at me and marched up beside me yelling “You said you know why I don’t want to go back”.

I nodded “Yes I do”

“So tell me” she stated.

“Why?” I asked to which she just gave me an incredulous look.

“What do you mean by why? I want to know that’s why” she stated the obvious.

“Hmmm Okay!” I told her and continued walking irritating her even more.

“Dylan!” she snapped.

“What Aderyn?” I continued testing her limits.

“I cannot believe this” she huffed and ran to catch up with me.

“Why are you always like this Dylan?” she questioned and I stopped at my tracks and turned to look at her.

“Like what?” I asked

“Like this. Can’t you behave more generous with me? Why do you always leave me hanging in the middle of a question? When are you going learn to give me perfect answers?” she questioned and I saw the urgency about wanting to know in her eyes. Her brown orbs which always looked dull were now filled with something else. It looked like she couldn’t understand me. She was trying her best to know me. And it filled my heart with happiness that at least she was trying. She was now opening up to me. It was a little effort by her what made me happy was the fact that she was trying. It gave me hope.

“I told you I know why you don’t want to come” I said and she nodded “Yeah!”

“But never told you that I will tell you the answer” I said and watched as she opened and closed her mouth like a fish. I smirked at her disbelieving look.

“Dylan!” she snapped

I shrugged at her and spoke “But I will tell you.”

She shifted on her foot and asked “When?”

“I’m just waiting for that perfect day when I could tell you the answer of your question.”

“Perfect day?” she asked and I nodded.

“And I think” I smiled at the thought.

“What?” she asked and I looked up at her saying “Nothing” with an innocent smile.

“Dylan!” she snapped for the third time of the day.

“When is that perfect da-” she stumbled and was just going to tumble down on to the ground when I caught her by her waist and saved her from falling. Her eyes widened looking up at me and she held onto my biceps for support.

“The day you share everything about you with me will be the day when I will be sharing everything about me with you” I told her and watched as she stared up at me with something in her eyes.

“There is nothing about me that I could share” she whispered and as soon as she said that I saw as sadness and pain flooded back into her eyes.

I freed a hand and began to stroke her cheek with my finger “I’m sure there is something that you could share with me otherwise” I made her stand on her feet and left her from my hold.

“Otherwise?” she asked to which I smiled to which her eyes widened even more.

“We will make some new memories which we could share with each other later” I said and turned around walking towards the pack house.

“Later?” I heard her whisper.

“Because we got our whole life to spend it” I stopped and then continued “with each other.”

As we walked back towards our house I kept her glancing at her once in a while. After I told to her she didn’t utter a word to me. She kept walking beside me and I kept stealing glances at her wanting to know what was going on inside her mind. But she kept her face neutral and it was getting hard for me to know as I can’t read her mind.

I walked towards her and slowly brushed my hand with her. She didn’t seem to seem to mind. So I took hold of her hand and intertwined our fingers with each other into tightly interlocked fingers.

“I wasn’t thinking of running away” she said looking up at me.

“And I wasn’t thinking of letting you go” I said “Ever”.

And we walked back to our house.

She tightened her hold on mine when we reached back to our house.

“Relax!” I told her and she sighed nodding at me.

“Luna!” we heard as we saw some members running towards us.

“Aderyn!” Bella called as she ran towards us.

“Bell I’m so sorry. I know I shouldn’t have ran lik-” she stopped in the middle when Bella plunged her arms around her which made Aderyn to let go of my hand and I reluctantly let her go.

Bella hugged Aderyn tightly and Aderyn returned her hug wrapping her arms around Bella.

“Are you alright?” Bell asked letting go of Aderyn.

“Yes!” Aderyn nodded smiling at her.

“God! we were so worried. Please don’t do that again” she said with a worried voice and I watched as Aderyn kept her palm on Bella’s face assuring her that she wasn’t going to do that again.

Soon Blake, Cole and everyone joined us and they continued throwing questions on Aderyn. While they encircled her and Aderyn continued giving them answers calmly I walked backwards giving them enough time to meet and greet their Luna.

“My Luna”.

Chapter 43

Aderyn Pov

I woke up to a knock on my door. I groaned feeling sleepy but still got up from the bed and draped the shawl around me as I was feeling cold because of the temperature.

“Bell?” I asked as I saw her standing out of my door with a smile on her face.

“Why are you up so early in the morning?” I asked and looked back towards the wall clock in my room and read the time “It’s only Five-thirty in the morning” I told her and yawned.

“Good morning Luna” she greeted looking happy as ever.

“What is it Bell?” I asked feeling sleepy and I leaned against the doorframe to support myself.

“I have something for you” she said happily and I raised my eyebrows and stood straight.

“Oh yeah?” I asked

“Close your eyes” she asked and I gave her an incredulous look.

“Bel-“she cut me off “No! Close your eyes first” she demanded.

“Fine” I said and closed my eyes.

“Ok no open your eyes” she said and I did to find a gift wrapped in a brown colored wrapper in her hand.

“What is this?” I asked

“For you” she jumped up and down on her foot.

“But wh-“she shoved the gift onto my hand and ran away giggling.

“Wait! Bell” I shouted for her but she didn’t even care to hear me out first.

I shook my head at her but nevertheless took the gift box and went inside my room closing the door behind me.

I sat on my bed and looked at the gift box.

“Why did she give it to me?” I muttered to myself.

I kept the box before me on the bed and began to unwrap it.

I gasped looking at the yellow fabric inside the box. I held it in my hand and unfold it to find a Yellow flare dress with a metal belt. I saw a note attached with the dress and I took it to read and found that it was from Dylan.

Wear this dress and come down towards the front side of the house at 10 am.

Will be waiting for you

Dylan

“Dylan?” I thought

“Why would he give me this dress and what is he up to?” I thought as I looked at the dress.

I never liked wearing a short dress for the scars I had on my leg and on my back.

“Should I wear this?” I thought.

I fell on my back and closed my eyes. I didn’t even recognize when I was in deep sleep.

“No I d on’t want to wear this” I told Bell who was trying to remove my hand from shielding my face for she couldn’t do the make up properly.

“But Luna you look lovely” she exclaimed as she tried to put on the lipstick on my face.

“No!” I got up from the place not letting her to apply the damn lipstick on my lips.

“And why am I even wearing this ? What is the occasion?” I cried out

“Aderyn don’t worry you look amazing. In fact you look totally different. Very famine and beautiful” she praised and I shook my head negatively not agreeing with her.

“Can’t you see this? I pointed out my scars on my legs “They are so ugly” I whispered to myself as I felt my eyes itching.

“What scars?” she came near me.

“I can’t even see the scars properly. You need to have confident upon yourself Luna” she told me with a smiling face. As much as I wanted to throw the dress away, I couldn’t. Because it was his first gift to me.

Sighing and nodding at Bell I took deep intakes and stood before the mirror to look at myself. I was wearing a Yellow fit and flare dress which reached my thigh and it had a metal belt on my waist. My hair was done into a side french pleat and my make up was light with mascara, eyeliner, light pink blush and light pink lipstick. I wore a silver stiletto to complete the look.

True to Bell, I did look different. It was the first time in my life when I recognized that I could look so beautiful. I felt happy looking at myself in the mirror but as my eyes fell on those scar on my legs, my smile immediately faded away. Those scars immediately reminded me what caused them and I ugly I really am.

I turned around and gave a small smile to Bell who looked contended looking at me.

“Let’s go now. It already half past nine now” she exclaimed as straightened her hair from her messy bun and giving it a brush to straighten it. She was also wearing a pink short dress which reached her mid thigh.

“Will you at least tell me what’s the occasion? Why are we getting ready like this?” I asked

“Oh! You will know now. Let’s get going” she chirped clapping her hands.

“What is all these suspense?” I asked as she began to pull me with her out of my room.

“Hey wait!” I tried to free my hand but she tightened her grip on my wrist dragging me with her.

Only the clicking of our heels could be heard while we walked towards the main door. I glanced towards my surrounding. I felt strange that I didn’t find a single person in the corridor.

“Where are the others?” I asked confused.

“They are all outside. C’mon now hurry!” she exclaimed

“Wait!” suddenly she stopped before me causing me to bump into her.

“What now?” I asked rubbing my forearm.

“You can’t go like this” she told? me as she began to rummage into her handbag searching for something.

“What do you mean by like this?” I asked and creased my nose when I saw her pulling out a blindfold from her handbag.

“You need to put it on your eyes before we go out” she said as she moved towards me to blindfold me.

“What? Why?” I argued

“What the hell is going on? Will you just tell me?” I asked and stepped back.

“Lun-” I cut her off “No! Tell me now” I pressed.

“You will know” she tried to blindfold me again.

“Bell” I warned.

“Please Luna trust me” she told me with a sigh and I huffed saying “Fine!”

She grinned widely and turned me around putting it over my eyes.

“Okay! Now let’s go” she took hold of my arm and guided me.

I heard the turning sound of the door knob and we walked out.

“Be careful! It’s the stairs now” she told me and I nodded at her.

As my feet touched the grassy ground I walked even more cautiously not wanting to tumble onto the ground.

“Okay! We are here” she told me and I felt her moving behind me to untie my blindfold.

As she untied it and took it off my eyes, I opened my slowly but closed it as a reflex due to light. As my eyes adjusted themselves with the light a gasp my mouth and I put my palm on my mouth to hide my shock.

There before my eyes everyone stood with a smile on their face. But what got my attention was the all those balloons, balloon arch, tables covered with gifts, buffet system and most importantly those big posters in which it was written in big block letters and while I read it everyone screamed with joy “Happy Birthday Luna.”

While I ready on the verge to break down I saw the person come before me who arranged all this with a smile on his face.

“Happy Birthday Aderyn.”

****

Chapter 44

Aderyn Pov

I looked here and there surprised as well as shocked. Everyone was cheering and shouting wishing me. My eyes fell on Dylan who stood there before me with a smile on his face.

“How?” my voice croaked out.

He shrugged not answering me and came towards me wrapping his arm around my shoulder.

“I never told anyone about my Birthday. Then how?” I asked again

“I have come to know everything about you” he said and I was going to ask how but was interrupted when Jenny came and handed me a gift box and then hugged me wishing “Happy Birthday Luna”.

“Uh Th-Thank You” I told her while another gift box was handed to me by Bell.

“And this gift is from me” Bell said as she hugged me.

“Dyla-” I was cut off by Blake who took hold of my hand and pulled me with him screaming “C’mon everyone! Cake time” and we stood before a table on which there was a chocolate cake.

“C’mon Luna cut the cake” Cole insisted and I nodded taking the knife from him.

“Happy Birthday to you” everyone began to sing in chorus but as odd as it made me feel, I felt happy for I was celebrating my Birthday after a long time.

I was going to cut the cake when Bell interrupted stopping me “Wait! Wait! First make a wish and blow those candles” she told me and every one groaned hearing her.

“She isn’t a child” I heard someone from the crowd.

“Shut up! It’s the rule before you cut the cake. It’s Mandatory” she snapped making me chuckle.

“Mandatory?” Blake asked and scoffed at her.

“I don’t know anything. You don’t listen to them Luna. Make a wish now” Bell insisted and I shook my head at her smiling at her behavior but did as she told me to do.

I closed my eyes and made a wish.

I blew the candles and cut the cake while everyone cheered.

I took the first slice and looked around.

“Oh! I thought she was going to offer me first as I am her best friend” I heard Bell sulking in disappointment.

“Shut up Bell!” Jenny glared at her and signaled to keep quite.

“Dylan?” I asked and searched for him in the crowd.

“Awwww” everyone cooed.

“Shut up guys” I told them embarrassed as I could feel my cheeks burning, a tint of pink appearing on my cheek as I blushed.

“Alpha!” Cole called him for me and I saw as the crowd gave him space to get near me.

He raised an eyebrow at me undoubtedly teasing me and smiled at me walking towards me.

Every step he took I felt something different inside me. Suddenly I became to feel nervous. The piece of cake was still on my hand as I waited for him to reach me. But I felt like I was paralyzed, hypnotized by him as I stood rooted to my place. It was happening for the first time in my life. I felt as if everything was perfect. My life was being perfect. Somehow I felt a beacon of hope coming towards me which could pull me out of all those punishing dreams and memories.

And I was seeing Dylan as that beacon of hope.

I never realized when he reached me and stood right before me.

When I didn’t move he took hold of my hand and took it towards his mouth taking a bite of the cake. Then he took the piece out of my hand and offered me to eat. I smiled at him and took a bite not caring about the people who were awed by their King’s sweetness.

“Look here!” I heard a guy and looked towards him to find him holding a camera in his hand asking me and Dylan to pose for the picture.

I was reluctant but when Dylan wrapped his arm around my waist and pulled me to him I could no longer deny.

While the camera clicked taking our pictures, my mind was only thinking about Dylan’s arm. It felt so right to be on his arms. Every time he wrapped his arm around me I felt as if I no longer need to care or take tension about the world. I felt so safe whenever I was with him.

I gazed up at him while he posed and smiled for the camera.

I had been thinking about this from a very long time now.

“Am I really right Luna for you? Because I think you are too perfect for me. And it scares me that what if I don’t stand on to your expectations. I have failed so many times in my life that I have lost every confidence in me.”

“And I don’t think that I could be able to bear to loose you” I thought and while I felt my eyes getting watery I blinked several times to stop my tears from flowing and smiled looking at the camera.

“Why are not eating anything?” Bell asked as she kept her hand on mine looking worried.

“Don’t you like it? I thought it was your favorite” she said and I shook my head negatively stopping her to get even more worried.

“uh No! No! I love it” I said and the spicy spaghetti assuring her that nothing was wrong.

“It’s starting to get cold right? I could see you shivering” she told me and I nodded.

“How did you all get time to prepare all this?” I asked as I gestured towards the decoration and buffet system where people were having their lunch now.

She smiled and shrugged.

“It was King who did all this” she told me and I gave her a disbelieving look.

“You mean h-he did all this for me” I asked and she nodded grinning at me.

“The King wanted to see his mate happy. He did all this to show you how much you really mean to him” she said and I gulped down the water and stood up from my place.

“Hey! Where are you going leaving your food?” she asked and I looked around searching for Dylan. He needs to tell me how he got to know about my Birthday.

“To Dylan” I said and walked when I spotted him sitting with some guys far away from me.

“Of course” I heard Bell muttering and I winked at her before walking towards Dylan.

“Oh it’s the Queen!” I heard one of the guys speaking when I neared them.

All of them except Dylan stood up from their place bowing their head at me in respect.

“Long live the Queen” they said in chorus and I gave them a nervous smile feeling little awkward at all their way of addressing me.

“Dyl-” I was cut off by him when he pulled me down to him using my wrist and I fell on him sitting on his lap.

I gasped at our close proximity but glared at him when I noticed the guys still standing near us. As awkward it was for me to sit on the lap of my mate before them it was awkward for them to watch their own Queen and King being all touchy touchy in the public.

“Dylan!” I snapped and tried to stand only to be pulled back to him and I kept my hand on his shoulder for support.

“Leave me. What are you doing?” I whispered feeling embarrassed.

He smirked and to my horror pulled me even closer to him making me gasp.

“Look here!” I heard and turned my head towards the person only to see him clicking our picture in such a position.

“Oh no!” I tried to stop the guy but he carried on clicking pictures.

“Dylan stop him” I turned to Dylan but my breath got hitched when I found him already looking at me intensely.

“Dylan” I asked softly when he didn’t answer me. He was like paralyzed on his place.

Paralyzed just like me as I was some minutes ago.

“Please look here!” we heard the guy which caused us to break out of our little staring moment.

I shifted on his lap feeling embarrassed but stiffened when he held me tightly and asked the guy to take a good picture of us.

Nevertheless, I smiled at the camera and after two clicks Dylan unwrapped his arms from my waist and I took it the moment to get myself free. I stood up from my position and was ready to go back to Bell but was stopped when he held my hand stopping me from going anywhere.

I looked back at him and saw him standing up from his place.

“We will be back. Enjoy the party” he told the guys and they bowed their head at him.

And the next moment I was being dragged. I was trying hard to match his large steps.

“Dylan, where are we going?” I asked but received no answer from him.

“At least slow down” I asked which made him stop.

I looked up at him confused on what he was planning to do.

“Dyl-” I squealed when I felt him holding me by my waist and throwing me over his shoulder. The world seemed upside down to me and I dangled on his shoulder screaming for him to Put me down.

“Dylan What are you doing? Put me down” I swung my legs when I felt him wrapping his arms around my lower half.

“Dylan!” I snapped.

“Put me down this instant. Dylan put me down or else I am telling yo-” I felt him wrapping his arms across my back and I thought that maybe he was putting me down but I gasped when I felt my mouth being captured in a hungry kiss. I was still lifted up in the air while he wrapped his one arm on the back on my thigh and another on my back.

I was surprised.

I kept my hands on his shoulder when I felt him kissing my lower lip a few times and then he began to smooch me and kissed my upper lip hungrily and passionately.

I felt adrenaline pulsing through me and my palms felt clammy.

All of a sudden he put me down and I stumbled back but was saved by him holding my hands for support.

While I was out of breathe and I stood there staring at him with wide eyes and huffing out air from my lungs and tried to steady my fast beating heart, he stood there perfectly fine only staring at my lips which I was sure that were red and swollen by now.

I removed my hand from his hand hold and turned around. All of a sudden confusion marred my face wanting to know why he kissed me.

I could feel my limbs shaking and my breaths were still coming out in shorts.

I felt same as I felt when I did skydiving for the first time.

I could literally feel myself blushing deep red but then I began to feel excited. I wanted to feel what I felt again. I wanted so badly to feel those tingles again on my body.

So, I did what I wanted to do.

I turned around and took hold of his shirt collar and pulled him down to my level.

“Kiss me” I said and kissed him full on his lips making him surprise this time.

Few seconds later I felt him wrapping his arms around me and pulling me closer to him and soon we were kissing each other passionately like never before. I left his collar and wrapped my arms around his neck while he roamed his hands on my back pulling me impossibly closer. Every time I stopped for breathing he pulled me back to him kissing me even more passionately and hungrily.

Soon I felt him kissing the sides of my lips and his mouth trailed down towards my neck and I felt his lips on my pulsing vein on my neck while I stood their leaning against him feeling his warm body close to mine.

I don't know about him but I, I was totally a goner.

****

Chapter 45

Aderyn Pov

As his breath fanned on my face and mine on his, we stood their holding each other trying to catch our breath after our kiss.

He moved his hand my back and wrapped it around hugging me. I too moved my hand from his neck and wrapped my arms around his torso hugging him. I leaned against him and placed my ear near his chest listening to his racing heart. I was happy that his condition was same as mine and whatever I was feeling at the moment perhaps he was feeling the same.

“You look so beautiful” he told me and I blushed hiding my face on his chest.

I heard him chuckling at me and then I felt him rubbing my arm using his hand.

“I love the colour yellow on you” he whispered into my ear.

Then he told hold of mine hand and brought to it to his mouth and placed a soft kiss just under my knuckle.

“How did you know that today is my birthday?” I asked looking up at him.

He smiled and removed his hand around me and me by my waist and asked me to sit down.

I did as he told and we both sat on the grass. I leaned against him and looked around to find ourselves in the back side of the house, away from every one.

“Remember how I got to know all about you?” He asked and I gave him a confused look not understanding what he was saying.

“The first time you left” he said and then I realized.

“Oh!” I said.

I heard him sigh and the next moment he wrapped his one arm around my shoulder pulling me close.

“I am sorry for that” he told me and I gave him a small smile.

“But how did you do that? Is that some type of power of yours?” I asked and saw him shook his head negatively.

“It isn’t” he said

“Estelle helped me” he told me and I creased my nose thinking about who Estelle was.

“Estelle Helliot. She is one of the eleven witch” he answered my unanswered question.

“She helped me to get you back” he said and I sighed thinking about that day feeling bad that I slapped him.

“If you are thinking about that slap then don’t because I perfectly deserved it” he said out of nowhere and I gave him an amused look.

“Yeah! I mean I did a mistake. I should have closed my mind link before getting into your mind. And my stupidity caused every one to” he paused and then said “know about you.”

“Are you uh” I paused to think appropriate words to ask and then said “Embarrassed about my past?”

“No! What? How could you even think that? I can never be embarrassed in fact I am proud of you. I got a strong mate. She is even more stronger than me” he said and I smiled putting my head on his shoulder.

We kept for some minute when I spoke.

“I never celebrated my birthday” I whispered.

Though I knew that he might be already knowing this still I thought of sharing it.

“I felt lonely on my birthdays. I used to think that my birth was a curse for me to live alone in this world without anyone to care for me or to whom I could call a family.”

“I felt like running away to some isolated and deserted place” I said remembering those birthdays when I used to get beat up for my training, or when I was crying for the loss of my family.

“No it is not a curse. You are a bless for me” he said wrapping his arms tightly around me and I smiled keeping my hand on his.

“I thought I would be living lonely all of my life until one day I saw you walking into my life like a ray of light to my already darkened life” he said and I felt him resting his chin on top of my head.

“I wanted to save you back then” he whispered

“I wanted to save you from me. That is why I always kept on pushing you away from me.”

“Then I recognized that I can’t stay away from you. Even if I tried, you were always in my mind.”

He kept quiet for some minute with me still embraced in his arms.

“Now please don’t punish me for doing that by pushing me away. Because I have realized that I can’t stay away from you. Ever” he said but I felt the uneasiness in his voice.

So to ease it I said what I have decided earlier “Don’t worry! I have decided that” I paused and took a deep breath but I felt him getting worried all of a sudden.

“Decided that?” He asked

“I will stay” I said and as soon as those words left my mouth I felt him relaxing.

“I would have brought you back if you even tried to leave” he said and I chuckled and shook my head at him.

He will never change.

“I have a gift for you” he said all of a sudden and I raised my eyebrows at him in amusement.

“Is this dress and this party isn’t enough for you? I thought it was my gift” I said and he smirked at me and bent on me making me bend backwards. He fished out a small box from his pant pocket but before moving away from me, he leaned on to me and swiftly pecked my cheek making me blush.

“Dylan” I groaned embarrassed.

He chuckled and handed me the box. I sighed at him and took the box from him and opened it.

I gasped seeing the white gold chain with gold lined silver round pendant with a small heart shape on it the middle of the pendant inside the box.

“It’s beautiful” I said and took the pendant out of the box holding it on my hand. It looked even more beautiful when the rays of sun reflected it’s pendant.

“And it will look even more beautiful when you wear it” Dylan said and took the chain from me and put it on my neck.

I smiled and turned to face him.

“How is it looking?” I asked smiling at him.

He stared more to my face than the pendant on my neck.

“Your eyes are twinkling. You look happy today” he said and I smiled nodding at him “Indeed I am happy.”

“Very happy.”

“You look beautiful” he said and placed a kiss on my forehead.

“It’s the best birthday gift I ever had” I told him and I heard him humming at me. His attention was on my lips.

“Dylan!” I held his chin and made him look at my eyes.

“I turned twenty-three today!” I said and leaned back on him.

“What is your age?” I asked as he clamped his finger on mine.

“Hmm?” He asked.

“Dylan where is attention?” I asked as I sat straight looking up at him.

“Sorry what?” He asked.

“What is this? Dylan are you even listening to me?” I asked and waved my hand before his eyes.

“Yeah! Yeah! I am listening” he said and wrapped me back into his arms pulling me to him.

“What is it Dylan?” I asked.

“Nothing” he smiled and rested his head on my my forehead.

“Dylan!” I unwrapped his hands around me and moved back.

“No! Come back to me” he said and pulled me closer to him and hide his face in the crook of my neck.

I can never understand this guy.

“Dylan” I asked.

“Happy Birthday my mate” I heard his animal tone in his voice and he raised his head and I saw his eyes turning deep green and I knew his beast was in control.

“Uh! Thank you Black!” I said and gasped when he raised me from my place and placed me on his lap keeping his head on my chest.

“My mate” he whispered and pecked my cheek making me blush.

How in the world am I going to control Black?

It is easy to control Dylan but how can I even stop Black?

“My mate!” He whispered and all of a sudden fell backwards on the ground with me still on him.

“What are you doing?” I asked and tried to get up.

“Stay!” He said making me freeze.

I stared down on to his deep forest green eyes and blinked at him thinking what he wanted.

“I haven’t gifted you anything yet” he said and I raised my eyebrow.

“Dylan did! He gifted me this dress, this party and this pendant” I gestured at the pendant that fell on his chest.

“Exactly! It was the human who gifted you. I haven’t gifted anything to my Queen” he said sulking and I smiled.

“You don’t need to. It’s okay!” I said but he denied.

“No it’s not okay! I want to gift something to my beautiful mate” he said and I sighed.

“Okay? So what is it?” I asked.

He grinned mischievously and I raised an eyebrow at him. I could see the little elongation on his teeth which looked like canines. It was the perfect signal to know that his beast was in control over his body.

“I will mate with you” he said out of nowhere and I choked on air hearing him.

“What?” I asked and tried to get up but he wrapped his arms on the back of my butt keeping me on him.

“I will make you mine as your birthday gift” he said and grinned widely at me perhaps thinking about the mating process.

“I will make you mine forever” he said and grabbed my butt squeezing it.

“Black!” I snapped and slapped his hand away from my butt.

This perverted wolf.

Then I felt him getting his hand inside my dress spiking my heart beat.

“Okay! That’s enough. Dylan come back!” I said as I patted his cheek trying to get Dylan back.

As I felt his hand roaming on my bare thigh I grew even more nervous and screamed “Dylan come back.”

“Dylan! Dylan! Dylan come back now!” I said and saw his eyes flickering.

Soon his eyes colour changed to its normal colour and he blinked few more times and adjusted his gaze on me.

“Thank God!” I said as I felt on his chest relieved that he came back.

“I can not handle Black!” I confessed and he said “Me neither” he said as he took his hands away from my thigh and kept it on my waist.

“But I do agree with him on one thing though” he said and I raised my head looking at him confusingly.

“On what?” I asked.

“To make you mine forever” he said and grabbed my face bringing my lips for him to kiss me senseless.

That moment I realized one thing.

I used to think that Black was the only one who was a pervert but I realized that I was wrong. Both of them were born perverts.

*****

Chapter 46

Dylan Pov

Happiness is a word that I never expected that it even existed for me. I am finding it really weird and at the same time really awesome to be blessed with such a mate who could bring me that liveliness and happiness.

I feel so alive nowadays.

I looked towards her seeing her happily chatting with her friends. She looked happy. Perhaps she was feeling the same as I am feeling for her. As long as she is happy I am happy too.

It has been two days to her birthday and now I am sitting on the couch while she sat on the stairs of the house with her friends chatting with them.

I saw as Bell touched the pendant that I gave to her and heard Jenny teasing her about the gift.

Seeing her blush, both of them laughed at her and I smirked at her when she gazed my way.

She glared at me but I could see the happiness in her eyes.

She looked beautiful wearing a white sweater and a skinny blue jeans. Her hair was down and she looked breathtakingly beautiful. It has been impossible for me to work whenever I see. My mind keeps zoning out only thinking about her.

I was working today when my mind flew back to those pink and plump lips of her when I kissed her that day and at that moment I want nothing but to at least see her beautiful face so that I could steady my racing heart.

I came out of my office and searched for her. Her scent guided me down towards the living room and I found her talking to her friends.

I sat on the couch and switched on the Tv and flipped through channels but my mind as usually was in some other place. I kept glancing her way.

Finally, I gave up.

“Cole where are you?” I asked through mind link.

“In the garage” he said and pursed my lips.

“Ask Jenny to come to you” I said and shifted on my seat looking at Aderyn who wasn’t giving me any attention. And it irked me.

“But I am workin-” I cut him off

“Ask her before I do it” I said and heard him sigh.

“Yes Alpha!” He said and disconnected.

Few minutes later I saw Jenny getting up from her place and leaving. I smirked seeing Aderyn raising an eyebrow at me.

“Oh now I understand why you asked me to call Jenny” I heard Cole teasing voice in my mind.

“Don’t worry! I won’t tell this to Blake. Enjoy!” He laughed and disconnected while I scoffed at him.

Now only one was left.

“Bell!” I said through mind link.

“Yes Alpha!” I saw her stiffening in her place making Aderyn worried.

“Leave!” I said and saw her getting up from her place and leaving the place without arguing.

“Bell? Hey Bell?” I saw a confused Aderyn looking at Bell who walked away but not before giving a teasing smile to Aderyn.

I smirked at it and averted my gaze towards the Tv.

I heard Aderyn sighing and minutes later, I saw her coming towards me and sitting beside me on the couch.

“Do you know why all of a sudden Jenny and Bell left without saying anything? Is there a problem?” She asked and I shook my head negatively not glancing towards her.

“Dylan did you do something?” She asked and I raised an eyebrow looking towards her.

“What makes you think that?” I asked.

“Then why in the world are you grinning like a fool?” She asked and then I realized that indeed I was grinning like a fool.

“Oh am I?” I asked innocently and she narrowed his gaze on me.

“Yes You are” she said and crossed her arms across her chest.

“No one should enter the living room now” I said in open mind link to all the members in the house.

“Yes Alpha!” I heard their voice in chorus.

“Dylan?” Aderyn asked.

“Come here!” I said showing her my lap.

“What?” she asked looking shocked.

“Come here!” I said again and saw her rolling her eyes at me an then leaning against the couch and watching the Tv.

I took the remote and switched the Tv off.

“What the hell? I was watching it” she yelled and threw the pillow on me.

I kept the pillow aside and asked her “Aderyn I am telling you for the last time. Come here!”

“Why are you so keen on wanting me to go there?” she asked all the while glaring at me.

“My foot is hurting. I want you here for a massage” I said and watched as she gave me a disbelieving look.

“You are crazy!” she said and got up to leave.

“Congelasco” I said and smirked when I saw her freezing on her spot.

I got up from my place and moved towards her and stood before her.

“Why can’t I move?” she asked looking horrified and I trailed a finger on her face.

“Because I don’t want you to move” I said and grinned when I saw her glaring at me.

“What did you do?” she asked in a dead tone.

“Nothing! Just used my power to freeze you” I said and I was sure if she was free she would have kicked me on my shin.

“Free me this instant” she said and I shook my head negatively “So that you will kick me? Nah!”

“Dylan” she warned me

“Fine!” I said and snapped my fingers and made her free.

“Don’t ever use your powers on me” she glared at me and sidestepped me wanting to leave.

“Okay I’m sorry” I said as I held her arm stopping her from going away.

She looked at me and sighed.

“I just wanted to hold you” I told her with a small smile and left her hand. I went back to the couch and sat on it.

“Uh Dylan?” I heard and saw her sitting beside me.

“I am calling Bella and Jenny back to you. You can spent your time with them” I said and tried to mind link both them.

Like I froze Aderyn a few minutes ago, my mind froze the same way when I felt her removing my hands and sitting on my lap.

“Happy?” she asked with amusement clear in her eyes.

“Very” I grinned and wrapped my arms around her.

“Can I ask you one more thing?” I asked and she raised an eyebrow nodding at me to continue.

“Can I kiss you?” I asked and she smiled giving me my answer.

As she wrapped her arms around my neck I smiled thinking that at least she was now opening up to me. Like I was to her.

When my lips met her, I felt those sparks and tingles flowing through my body. I felt electrified and I felt the thrilling excitement building up inside just by a mere touch of her.

I was working in my office when I saw a bright red light forming before me and I knew it was one of the witch.

“Cyreana” I said once the smoke disappeared and it took a form of a woman before me.

A lady stood before me with grey hair and violet eyes. She wore a black hood and held something in her hand.

“King” she said and bowed her head showing respect.

I nodded at her and got up from my place and walked towards her.

“What brought you here?” I asked confused because Cyreana Nox was one of the eleven witches and she was a very secretive type of witch. Most of the times she chose to be a loner, remaining away from every one. She is the only one among the witch who doesn’t have any family or a near one. In our kind she was known because of her wit and her ability to change the future.

“I heard from Estelle that you have found your mate. Our Queen” she said and I smiled nodding at her.

“Wait! Let me just call her. I was thinking of to introduce her to the kind within these few days, but you can meet her today” I said and was just ready to mind link Bell asking her to bring Aderyn to me but stopped when I saw her shook her head negatively.

“I will meet the Queen in the ceremony. I wanted to gift her something in our first meet and right now I don’t have anything with me for my Queen” she said and I nodded understanding.

“Though I know how she looks” she said and I furrowed my eyebrows

“You have already seen her?” I asked to which she shook her head no.

“Then?” I asked

“I saw a glimpse of her in the future” she said and I nodded understanding.

“So what was she doing in the future?” I asked suddenly getting excited thinking about our future.

“I saw her with you” she said making me even more happier than I really was.

“And what were we doing?” I asked out of curiosity. My voic, evident with a hint of impatience.

“I saw the Queen walking towards you and both of you hugged each other and I saw you kissing on her on her forehead” I found her answer very convincing. I liked the fact that we were even more closer to each other in the future.

“If I am correct, the Queen has long black hair, black eyes and is taller in height right?” she said and I gave her a confused look.

“What did you just say?” I asked thinking that I heard her wrong.

“The Queen has long black hair, black eyes and is taller in height than average girls” she said and I was ready to murder her.

“What?” I snapped with a murderous expression I stormed towards her.

“King I am saying what I saw” she said and took few steps back making me stop in my track.

“Dylan?” I heard Aderyn and turned towards the door to find her standing there with a neutral expression in her face.

“Look at her carefully. She is my mate. She has brown eyes and brown hair. And her name is Aderyn Brookes the future Queen” I said with a dead voice and glared at her warning her to deny the fact.

She gasped when she saw Aderyn. She took her hand to her mouth to hide her shock.

“I am sure that I didn’t see her” she whispered to herself but I heard it.

It was enough for me to loose my temper.

“Enough!” I roared.

“Go away before I kill you” I threatened.

“Alpha I am saying you the truth. Wait!” she said and closed her eyes and chanted something. Within seconds, I felt my eyes burning and everything around me vanished.

When everything began to take a shape I saw myself standing with Blake in the front side of our house.

“Oh! There she is! Queen!” he said and bowed his head.

I thought that maybe he was referring to Aderyn but all my dreams turned into a nightmare when I saw another woman coming towards me. I couldn’t see myself as the future Dylan was standing facing me his back. But by the noise I could tell that he was happy as I saw him laughing and taking the girl into his arms kissing on her forehead. The woman laughed and punched his arm to which he acted as if he was hurt. The woman surely had long black hair and she looked the same as described by Cyreana. She wasn’t Aderyn.

Everything changed before me and I found myself back in my office room with Aderyn standing near to me and Cyreana looking worried.

“What is this?” I whispered.

“What is going on?” I cried out loud holding my now throbbing head.

Everything seemed out of place now.

“Is this the reason why the Seniors haven’t shown up yet?” I heard Cyreana whispering to herself and I thought about it now,

Why hasn’t shown up yet?

They show up when a King finds his mate. When my Dad found my Mom they showed up just few days later and blessed them. Then why hasn’t they shown up yet?

“What’s going on?” I thought and took the paper weight from the table and threw it on the glass window making the glass shatter into pieces.

“Dylan!” Aderyn screamed

I turned around and ran to my room. I shut the door behind me and grabbed the jug full of water. Suddenly, I felt my throat getting dry. I gulped down the water and threw the jug into the floor.

“This can’t be happening” I screamed and punched on the wall.

“No! No! No! This can’t happen to me” I screamed throwing everything in my room.

My head was throbbing now and I was getting a headache now.

“Dylan!” I heard Aderyn outside of my door.

“Dylan please open the door” she pleaded knocking on my door.

“No! This can’t be happening to me. Why was she not in the future?” I asked myself looking towards the door.

“Is this mean that I am going to have a second mate?” I thought and sat on the bed terrified.

“But a second mate is blessed to those who” I looked with widen eyes when the door flew open revealing Aderyn who looked worried and miserable just like me.

“Those who have lost their first mate” I whispered realizing and felt suffocated to even think about it.

“Dylan” she ran to me.

“No! I can’t lose you. You were meant only for me. I can’t lose you” I began to twist my finger and shoved my knuckle into my mouth.

She came to me and stood before me. Her scent calming me but the beast within me began to pace around. He was feeling restless and was in edge. He was very angry and sad at the same time while me, I couldn’t understand what to do.

“I can’t live without you. I can’t lose you” I said as I wrapped my arms around her waist and kept my head on her belly.

“You are mine!” I said and finally I felt my cheek getting wet. I was crying. Because it was again happening with me, though this time I knew from beforehand that I was going lose a person again whom I loved the most in my life.

I loved Aderyn.

She stroked my hair and I could feel the sad vibes coming out of her but she was being strong, masking it all.

I was feeling as if my heart was getting sliced into pieces. The memories of when I met Aderyn for the first time invaded my mind and wrapped my arms even more tightly around her thinking that if I leave her she might disappear from my sight. Once again everything was being taken away from me and I will damned if I let anyone even touch what’s mine. Nobody could take my love away from. No one means no one.

I will destroy everyone if anything happened to my Aderyn.

“You are not going anywhere” I voiced out my thoughts determined.

“I am not letting you go away from me because you are mine and I love you” I said and heard her gasp.

***

Chapter 47

Dylan Pov

I kept on pacing around my room thinking what to do. What was it that I saw? Is it true? No! it can't be.

But Cyreana's predicted imminent vision can never be wrong.

I sat down on my bed pulling my hair. It's been three days since that incident, where life took a new turn, where once again every dream that I saw that I thought would come true was snatched away from me. But most importantly I felt as if my life was being taken away from me. A part of me was being teared away from me and there was nothing I could do.

Curse all this powers that I have. It's no use to me when I can't keep or save the most important person in my life. Suddenly, I felt suffocated and I coughed patting my chest. There is this uneasiness growing inside me thinking what if Aderyn goes away from.

"No!" I found myself whisper.

"Dylan?" I heard her voice from the outside of my door.

Since three days, I have refused to let anyone into my room neither I myself got out of my room. But Aderyn didn't give up on me. She would come and knock on my door asking about me. She would bring me food which she would take back when I refused to open the door. At one point she even pleaded me to open the door but I didn't.

It hurts me to hurt her but what can I do? I don't want to face her. I knew I was being a coward and selfish only thinking about my pain what can I do?

I was suppose to protect her and save her but...

"Dylan open the door" she pleaded. I could hear the urgency in her voice.

"Dylan!" she knocked harder.

"Are you hurt?" I heard her soft voice.

"Dylan are listening to me?" she asked and paused for a while. From my werewolf hearing ability I heard her taking sharp intakes. She was crying.

It pained me to know that I was the reason for her condition.

"Is her life is in danger because of me?" I thought feeling guilty.

“Dylan I know everything” she hiccuped “Cyreana told me everything what you saw” she said and I heard her heart beating wildly.

“Cyreana!” I cursed.

Damn! That woman can never lie. She probably gave up to her Queen.

“But Dylan you can never stop what’s meant to happen right? Perhaps it’s my fate. Dylan you can not give up on your present just by thinking about tomorrow right? Please let me in Dylan. Are you listening to me? Future is unpredictable. You can’t just do it to yourself. Think about your people. They need you. They need their King to be strong” she whispered.

“And about me? Can’t you see that I need you to survive? Without you I’m incomplete” I cried to myself.

“Dylan please remain strong. This will pass and I know that everything will be back to normal. Please let me in!” she cried banging on the door.

When I didn’t respond she went away after a while but I knew she was hurt.

I sighed and went inside my attached bathroom. I looked at myself in the mirror to find a broken man standing. His eyes were bloodshot red, he looked like a mess with his disarranged hair. I splashed water water few times on my face before standing and glancing at myself in the mirror.

I took my clothes off and took a shower to ease my tensed muscle. As soon as the water hit my body I felt relax.

“I don’t like hearing her cry” my wolf spoke for the first time. It was that he wasn’t oblivious to the fact that was going on. He too was agitated and was confused. For the first time in my life, I felt him scared. He was scared thinking about loosing his mate.

“Me neither” I told him.

“I don’t believe Cyreana’s vision” he said and growled remembering what he saw.

“I don’t know what to do” I said as I faced upwards and let the water hit my face.

“What Aderyn told you beforehand is true though” I snapped my eyes open upon hearing him.

“Future is unpredictable” he said making me have second thoughts on Cyreana’s imminent vision.

“We are talking about Cyreana here” I replied and heard him scoffing at me.

“I don’t trust any witch’s prediction. I trust upon me and my powers. If I want I can destroy everyone out there to keep my mate safe but I don’t think Aderyn would like that and” he paused for a while.

“And?” I urged him to continue.

“We can change Future as it is unpredictable else we could force Cyreana to change the future” he said and I shook my head no.

“Are you crazy?” I muttered punching the tile in the bathroom.

“You know the consequences of what will happen if she ever tries to change the future forcibly” I said through gritted teeth.

“It’s against the nature and she can be punished for doing so or maybe she would cost her own life doing so” I said as I rubbed my forehead feeling the headache hitting again.

“I don’t know anything. Don’t ask me. My brain is just not working right now” he said and went silent. He blocked me and I sighed as I turned the shower off and wrapped the towel around my waist and stood before the mirror in my bathroom.

“But I do agree on one thing. Future is unpredictable” I said and got out of the bathroom and went inside the closet to change.

Minutes later I stood before Aderyn’s door. I took a deep breathe and I finally decided on doing what was rightly to be done.

I turned the knob and without knocking went inside her room and closed the door behind me making sure to lock it.

She wasn’t in her room. Guessing from the sounds of water running from the bathroom I knew that she was inside taking a Shower. I sat on the bed waiting for her.

Minutes later I heard the sound stop and I knew she was done.

The door opened and she came out already dressed up into a white shirt and a black leggings. The fact that her hair was till wet and the water that dripped into her clothes from her wet hair made her white shirt little transparent where I could see her waist and some parts of her chest. She looked divine and breathtakingly gorgeous.

It pained me think that I was going to give her pain right now. It was for the betterment of our relation.

As soon as she saw me a gasp escaped her lips and she held the towel in her hand that she was previously using to dry her hair. Suddenly her eyes felt with happiness perhaps seeing me perfectly fine.

“Dyla-” she was cut off when in a lightening speed I stood in front her face only mere inches away from her face.

“W-What’s wrong?” she asked and tried to back away.

I took hold of her hand and made her stand against the wall caging her.

“Dyla-” I cut her off by placing a finger on her lips.

“Sssh! I am sorry love” I whispered as I began trailing my finger on her face.

“For what?“she asked and all of a sudden she looked nervous standing before me.

“You were right” I said as I inched closer and whispered into her ear ” I shouldn’t give up on my present just by thinking about the future. Future is unpredictable and it can change if we try to mend our present. It depends upon our present and my both present and future is you” I said and placed a kiss on her ear making her shiver. I felt her loosing the grip on the towel as I held her by her waist and began to kiss her neck.

“W-What are you doing?” she managed to ask.

“I am changing my future. I am going to mark you now and then I will mate with you. Then we will always be together. Forever” I told her and noticed her freezing on her spot.

“W-What?” she asked with wide eyes.

I nodded with a smile took a strand of her wet hair into my finger, twirling it around my finger I said “After that nobody could ever take you away from me. Because you will become a part of me and my kingdom. You will get some of my powers and my people will happily guard their Queen and will even wish to die protecting you. If I mate you I will be getting my kind’s help in protecting you and then” I took hold of her hand and placed a kiss on it.

“We will always be together” making her shiver.

She tried to push me but I held her by her arms “Dylan I don’t think that I am read-” I cut her off “Don’t worry love it will take just some few hour to complete the mating process. You won’t feel a thing” I said as I crashed my lips against her trying to dominate her.

“Dylan!” she pushed me away “Do you even know what you are saying?” she asked as she started to struggle her arms to get herself free.

“I don’t want to wait any longer. Marking you will make you secure” I said as I took hold hold of her hand and folded it backwards.

“Ouch Dylan!” she struggled.

“Sorry love. Just stay still. You are making it hard for me. I know I am forcing you but it is for your own safety. I can’t see you away from me” I confessed and placed my forehead against her.

“Dylan please let me go! I don’t want to do this. I am not ready” she begged as tears escaped her eye.

“Sssh! Sssh! Love please don’t cry. I am not going to hurt you” I said and took hold of both o her hand in my one hand and used another to get rid of her the buttons of her shirt and freed the part where I was going to mark her.

“You are! You are hurting me right now” she said and raised her knee to kick me. I blocked it using my free hand and stood between her leg not giving her any chance to escape.

“No! Dylan please. Please let me go” she cried and in a swift movement I threw her on the bed and hovered over her holding her hand above her head.

“Dylan please stop!” she pleaded when I began to kiss her neck and suck on it.

“You are so beautiful” I complimented as I placed small kisses on her lips and neck.

“You are mine! I love you so much my Aderyn. You are only mine!” with that I tore her shirt and threw it away leaving her in her black bralette and she began to struggle against me sobbing even more loudly.

“You won’t feel anything. I will try not to hurt you. I promise” I said and that is when my canines elongated preparing to mark what’s mine.

*****

Chapter 48

Dylan Pov

I could hear my heartbeat rising as I placed soft kisses on her neck. I bit down on her skin slowly and teasingly wanting her to enjoy it but she wanted nothing but to get me off her. She kept on struggling beneath me while I kept on tightening my hold onto her keeping her on place. I kept placing soft kisses on her skin and tried to find the perfect place where I could put the mark on her. Finally, when I found the place I sucked on her skin and felt her tremble under me.

“Dylan please stop! I don’t want to do this. Not right now” she cried and wiggled her hands trying to get it free.

“It won’t take long” I said as I prepared myself to puncture her skin with mine teeth.

“Stop! Please” she cried and I stopped when I heard what she told me the next “I don’t know about the future but if you do this, you are going to lose me forever” my head shot up to look at her.

“Do you know what you are doing?” She asked

“It’s called being selfish. You are only thinking about yourself right now. What about me? What about me Dylan?” She sobbed

“You are running away from the truth. Why are you even believing upon that vision?” She said and suddenly I could see her fear subsiding and it was replaced by anger. Her anger flickered on her eyes and I heard my wolf sighing.

“When I told you I want to stay than it means I want to stay and I am not going anywhere. When I said that I genuinely and honestly meant it” she said and closed her eyes taking deep breaths and opened it back and said “Do you really think that our mating can change everything?”

“Do you really think that nothing would happen to me if you do this to me?”

“Fine! Give me hundred percent assurance that nothing will happen to me and I promise you that I will give you permission to do whatever you want to do with me” she challenged me with rage filled in her eyes.

“Give me assurance” she said with determination filled in her voice.

“She is right!” Black spoke for the first time interfering our conversation.

“She is hurt” he whispered and lowered his ears down feeling guilty.

I glanced down at Aderyn. As much as she looked angry upon me I realized that she was sad and hurt at the same time because of my action.

“As much as I want to mate her I don’t want to not at the cost of hurting her” he said and I found myself losing my hold on Aderyn.

I sighed as I felt my teeth going back to its normal size. Regret washed over me thinking about the way I treated her. My eyes began to get watery and before she could see my eyes, I put my head on her chest and heard her weeping finally losing it.

“I am sorry” I whispered.

“My intention was not to hurt you” I said feeling guilty.

“I am sorry” I said with a hoarse voice and soon I felt her wrapping her hand around my head.

“I never wanted to hurt you” I said and she whispered back “I know.”

“Forgive me” I said and felt her stroking my hair.

“I don’t want to lose you” I said truly.

“You will not lose me” she said and I felt her breathing coming out in shorts. I realized it was probably because of my weight. I got off her just enough to let her breathe properly but kept my head on her chest and wrapped my arms around her waist not wanting to let go.

“Promise me that you will never leave me” suddenly my voice came out in a plead.

“Dylan I-”

“No! I don’t want to hear anything. Promise me that you will never leave me” I said stubbornly tightening my hold on her.

“I promise you that I will never leave you” she said and all of a sudden I felt as if a weight was put off my shoulder.

“Did I hurt you somewhere? I mean physically?” I asked recalling shoving her against the wall.

“No you didn’t” she said and I felt little relieved.

We kept quiet for sometime I felt my hand on her bare skin. Then only I recognized what really happened. I averted my gaze downwards and saw it.

She was in her bra and as I was lying on her chest I could get a clear view of her cleavage.

“I used to think that you were flat chested” I muttered to myself.

“What?” she heard me

“But you are not” I said and smirked when I heard her gasp.

“You pervert! Get off me” suddenly she began to struggle against me as she tried to push me away.

“Dylan! Let go” she yelled.

“No!” I exclaimed.

“What no? Get off now! And don’t forget that you just tore my shirt away. It was your fault that I am like this now. Bare!” she pushed me hard on my chest.

“I don’t have any regrets on that” I told her smirking when I heard her muttering something like ‘pervert’ to me.

“Get off!” she snapped.

“No! Why would I? I am enjoying the view here.”

“Urg! Fine! Do whatever you want” she struggled for some more minute but eventually gave up.

“I love you” I blurted out all of a sudden.

I heard her heart beat growing and her breath coming out in shorts.

“And I regret confessing to you at a time like that” I said as I recalled the time when I confessed her.

“Do you feel anything for me?” suddenly I grew curious wanting to know about her feelings.

I hovered over her and balanced my weight on my elbow as I looked into her eyes.

“Why are you asking this all of a sudden?” she stuttered a bit and I could feel her getting nervous all of a sudden.

“Just want to know” I said

She stared up at me and then lowered her gaze. I felt her fingers playing with the hem of my shirt.

“So you don’t even feel anything for me” I said feeling little low about it.

“No!” she exclaimed.

“I mean I do feel something for you” she told me and a smile formed on my lips.

“What do you feel?” I asked curious to know.

“I umm every time you touch me I feel all these tingles in my body. Every time you look at me I feel my heart fluttering, my breaths coming out in shorts, and every time I am in your arms” she paused while she looked up right in my eyes.

“I feel safe and protected. And I think I like you” she said softly and I could no longer stop myself from smiling.

“I guess I have to hope for little steps from your side” I lowered my head and placed a kiss on her neck.

“Can I ask you something?”

“Hmm?” she hummed.

I began to trail my finger on her neck and placed my hand on there.

“Can I mark you?” I asked which made her look at me with confusion.

“I just want to keep you safe” I said and heard her fastening heart beat.

“I promise I won’t hurt you or cross my limit” I said with hope filled in my voice.

She kept staring at me for some minutes not uttering a word.

“It’s okay. Relax!” I said smiling down at her.

“You don’t need to if you don’t want to. I can wait” I said and tried to get off her but stopped when she put her hand on mine that was previously on her neck.

She got hold of her hand and took it to her face and leaned against it closing her eyes.

“You may” she whispered.

Her words immediately brought back smile on to my face.

“I promise you won’t regret” I said as I lowered myself and captured her soft lips into a passionate kiss.

Immediately she wrapped her arm around my neck pulling me down to her. I kissed her lower lips first and then her upper lips. I licked her lips asking for entrance and fortunately she after much reluctance she gave me entrance. I invaded her mouth and we fought for dominance which I won easily.

Then I began to place kisses all over her face making her giggle. I loved hearing her giggle. She was enjoying and was being comfortable to what I did. It was all that I needed for her to be comfortable around me.

I trailed down to her neck and began to suck every part of her skin. I heard her moaning and it was enough to ignite the flame inside me. I began to grow my pace of kissing and sucking her. I found my wolf pacing around in my mind. He seemed excited.

“Just do it already” she groaned.

As my teeth elongated into canines and I felt a part of my body being controlled by my beast, I looked down at her and saw the fear in her eyes.

“The pain won’t last longer” I said assuring her and she looked up giving me a small nod.

I lowered my head and bit down on her skin. When I found the spot for my mark, I kissed it and with one swift movement punctured her skin.

She screamed out of pain and dug her nails on my arms. I dug more inside of her skin while she screamed and winced because of the growing pain. Her nails dug inside my skin through my shirt fabric and I could feel blood oozing out of it.

The blood taste in my mouth didn’t last longer as I began to start the process to mark her. Soon I could feel her pain subsiding and I heard her moaning.

Then I felt it.

Her emotions flooding into my body as I began to feel each and every emotions that was growing inside her.

Most importantly I began to hear what she was thinking. And she was thinking “Do I love Dylan?”

*****

Chapter 49

Aderyn Pov

I still can't believe that he has finally marked me. When I woke up this morning I found myself wrapped in his strong arm while he slept near the crook of my neck snoring lightly. At first I couldn't understand what was going on and then my head began to spin and I felt immense pain in my body. I closed my eyes shut and slowly felt as the memories of what happened returned back and I remembered everything.

I remembered how he marked me. Slowly I raised my hand and touched my neck where the skin was burning. I felt the spot burning. As soon as I touched it I felt sparks flowing down into my body. I took a deep breath and slowly tried to pry Dylan's arm from me. With great difficulty I managed to take it off me and slowly got from the bed. I saw my top on the floor and though it was torn from the front, I wore it nonetheless at least to cover my body because I was still in my bra.

My face turned into a dark shade of red when I saw Dylan moving his hand on the spot where I was previously sleeping perhaps trying to find me. I made my way towards him not wanting to wake him up. As soon as I placed my hand on his, he pulled me towards him and snuggled against me sighing.

I smiled at him and raked his hair with my finger. I felt my throat burning and I exhaled a breath feeling my eyes stinging. I removed myself from Dylan and took the jug of water from the nightstand and gulped down the water. The burning sensation subsided and I felt relief washing into my body.

I took a deep breath and walked into the bathroom. I saw myself in the mirror. I saw the place where he bite me last night. It was red and most importantly there was a mark. I leaned more against the basin in order to see it clearly. It looked like a sort of white tattoo with small moon shape and tribal design. The mark was raw and the place was swollen. Whenever I touched it, it would send sparks down my body and a electrifying sensation.

I splashed the water on to my face few times and even splashed some water on the mark wanting to stop the burning sensation. The place was only burning but I wasn't feeling any pain. But I was feeling irritation growing into my body every time I touched it. My body was now some how starting to ached and I felt my head throbbing.

I closed my eyes and wished for it to stop. And as if my plea was heard I felt the familiar sparks and tingles flowing into my body as soon as I felt his hand on my waist.

"Aderyn" he whispered softly into my ear and sniffed my hair.

Unknowingly I found myself smiling at his little gesture and wrapped my arms around his as I felt him moving my hair to the other side from the spot where he marked.

He kissed the spot and immediately I felt my body in fire as I threw my head on his chest in pleasure and in satisfaction. The feeling was foreign to me yet they were strong from what I used to feel when I wasn't marked as his.

He sucked on the spot and I felt my legs losing its strength. He held me tightly against his body as he continued his assault on my body.

Every time he kissed I felt my body being light weighted and the previous pain subsiding. It was like my body was responding to him in its own way. The more he kissed the more I felt the burning subsiding with desire. Flame of desire and need began to ignite into my body as I lost the control on my body. Nothing was helping me at the moment. My brain wasn't listening to me anymore.

A moan escaped my mouth and I managed to speak "wh-what's h-happening t-to me?"

"You are bind to me now" I heard his husky seductive voice and felt him kissing my jawline.

"Half of the mating process is over,every one" he said and touched my mark with his finger.

"Now everyone will know that you are the Queen and my mate" he turned me around and I looked up into his eyes.

"Oh God! Why is he looking handsome all of a sudden? Why is he looking at me like this? Don't look at me like this unless you want me to jump on you and kiss you-" my thoughts were cut off by him as he cleared his throat looking flushed.

"Aderyn if you keeping thinking that I won't be able to stop myself from completing the mating process. You are being sensuous right now. Stop thinking that" he said and I looked at him with wide eyes.

"How the heck did he know what I am thinking?" I thought.

"Because I can hear all of your thought and it's not helping me," he said tightening his arms around me.

"What?" I voiced my thoughts.

"I can hear your thoughts now" he smiled affectionately as he kept his palm on my face.

"No way!" I thought.

"Yes way" he smirked and I narrowed my eyes at him.

Is he lying? Let's take a test.

"I love carrots," I thought and I saw him cringing his forehead but he didn't say anything. Maybe he really was lying. Nevertheless, I thought of testing him again.

"I'm a single lady, I'm a single lady, I'm a single lady now put your hands up" I sang in my mind. He gave me an incredulous look but replied nothing. I was growing even more positive that he couldn't hear my thoughts.

"Diva is a female version of a hustla, of a of a hustla" I sang in my mind.

"Fairies live in popcorn land"

"Hello! Hi! bye! bye!"

He kept his face stoic.

"Naruto! Sasuke! Sakura" I thought about my favorite anime.

"London breeze is falling down" still no reply.

"Dog says meow! Cat says bow wow!"

I smirked and sighed in contentment.

"Thank god he can't hear my thoughts," I thought and heard him scoffing. I gave him a look and thought of testing him for the last time.

"I love Sean O' Pry," I thought and his look turned murderous in a second.

"Who is he? I will kill him" he roared in anger while I looked at him in shock.

"Oh no! Oh no" I said and the next moment I yelled at the top of my lungs embarrassed that he heard everything that I thought while he put his finger animatedly inside his ear saving him sensitive ear from my voice.

"Fairies live in popcorn land?" he said and chuckled putting his fingers on the bridge of his nose.

"Shut up!" I groaned with a red face feeling embarrassed.

"Who told you that?" he asked while stifling a laugh but failing miserably.

I glared at him and pulled my coat.

"I was just testing you" I said and turned my face to the other side not wanting him to see my redden face.

"Liar! I can't believe this" he said as his fasten his pace after me.

“Oh shut up already” I said and looked back at him.

“I like walking with you like this” I heard him and smiled at him in response.

“Aderyn!” he called and I stopped on my tracks and turned to face him.

He stood there silently just staring at me. But I knew that staring.

“What?” I asked

“What?” Dylan replied.

“Why are you staring at me like that?” I asked crossing my hand across my chest.

“Why? Can’t I stare at my mate?” he asked and I narrowed my eyes at him.

“Dylan!” I warned

“Aderyn” he smirked as he made his way towards me. I turned around and sprinted into the woods.

“You can’t run away from me Aderyn” I heard him chuckling.

“Whatever Dylan” I said and ran deeper into the woods.

“Why are you even trying?” I heard his voice and I knew that he didn’t even move from his place because of over confidence.

I stopped running and looked for a place where I could hide myself. I saw a tree and climbed it and tried to hide myself as much as I could. But then it stroked me.

“Damn! he is not a human” I scowled thinking that he will easily sense me or sniff my scent.

“Wait! Smell” an idea stroked my mind and grinning I got down from the tree.

“I know that you can find me but I will not let you find me so easily” I smirked and took my coat off me and searched for a good place so that he could find my smell on it.

I took a wild fruit and sniffed it. It had a great fragrance and it didn’t look poisonous at all but I couldn’t take risk for who knows?

I rubbed the fruit on my boots avoiding my skin and rubbed it on my gloves. I was wearing only my jeans and my brown T shirt. I took some wild flower and climbed back up on the tree hiding myself inside the branches and leaves.

I smirked thinking “Now you can’t find me that easily.”

Seconds later I heard the twigs snapping.

“oh! here he comes” I smirked when I saw his figure coming towards my direction.

“Aderyn Come out. I know you are here” he sang goofily and I had to cover my mouth from stopping myself from giggling.

“Sometimes he behaves so cutely that I can’t resist myself from giggling” I thought.

“Aderyn?” he was so near now.

Like I had thought he began to sniff the air searching for my scent. I kept the wild flowers close to me wanting to give him a mixed fragrance wanting to confuse him.

“Gotcha!” he smirked as he went towards the bushes where I kept my coat previously. Like I had thought he will go to the nearest place where he finds my scent and as I had planned he went towards the bushes and looked inside it only to scowl holding the coat.

“What the heck?” he examined the coat scowling at it.

I stifled a laugh at his behavior but gasped when his eyes directly fell on my direction.

“Got you” he sang as he walked under the tree. Though I was sure that he couldn’t see me as I was completely hidden behind the branches and leaves somehow he sensed.

“Aderyn why did you climb this tree? What if you got hurt?” he scolded while I rolled my eyes.

“Oh god! not again” I muttered.

“Aderyn get down. I know that you are here. There is no point in hiding now” he said as he folded my coat and held it in his one hand.

I sighed and got out from my hidden place.

“It’s no fun” I whined at him.

“Get down” he said folding his arms across his chest.

I stood on my place making his facial expression changed into a worried one.

“What are you doing?” he yelled at me whilst I grinned mischievously at him.

“Catch me” and I jumped on him not caring if he could hold me or not. Not caring that I could get hurt. Not caring that I could break my limbs. But somewhere down in my heart I knew that he wouldn’t let me fall. At first he seemed startled by my sudden action but soon came back to his sense and throwing my coat he caught me.

I fell safely in his arms bridal style much to his relief and much to my pleasure.

“What the hell? Why did you do that for?” he scolded but I wrapped my arms around his neck and giggled.

I did that after a long time. When I was a kid I used to do this with my Dad and with Ryan because I knew that they wouldn't let me fall. I trusted them.

"Does this mean I am trusting Dylan now?" I thought and found Dylan smiling down at me.

"You test me too much" he said as he raised me up and hugged me in affection.

"And you tend to pass every time" I thought to which he chuckled.

"I won't ever fail you" he said as he looked into my eyes affectionately.

"Even if you fail, I'll come back to you every time" I thought and he looked at me with widen eyes probably shocked hearing my confession in my thoughts.

I smiled at him affectionately.

"Don't get shocked, because you were always in my thoughts from the day I laid my eyes on you" I thought making him smile even more.

"You are perfect for me" he said and I raised myself up in his arms hugging him tightly while he hugged me back chuckling.

****

Chapter 50

Dylan Pov

“Is everything ready for the ceremony?” I asked Cole who was busy going through some stacks of papers probably a list.

“Yes Alpha” he said and handed me the paper.

“What is it?” I asked scanning through the paper.

“Your sign is needed for allowing every Alpha to enter the Kingdom”.

“Okay” I muttered and read the paper. When I was satisfied I put my signature on it and gave it back to him.

“Very well. Now what else?” I asked as I rotated the pen between my fingers.

“No it was all” he said and I nodded looking out of the window to find a dark cloud surrounding my kingdom.

“Strange! It’s going to rain I think” I whispered but due to werewolf hearing capability Cole heard me and he hummed in response.

“I don’t like this weather” he said and I nodded in agreement.

“Where is Blake?” I asked as I looked towards him.

“He is on patrolling”.

“King!” suddenly I heard Blake’s voice trying to connect me in my mind.

“King” he called again.

“What’s wrong Blake?” I asked sitting attentively on my seat.

“I think there is something wrong” he said and I saw Cole giving me a questioning look. He was too in the mind link and he could hear everything that Blake said.

“What do you mean?” Cole asked through the mind link.

“I was patrolling through this area near to the stream when I sensed something weird” Blake responded and the way he said I knew there was really something disturbing.

“What type of weird thing?” I asked

“When I was passing by the streams I felt as if I was being watched. So I stopped in my track and looked around for anything suspicious but found none. So at first I shrugged it off thinking I was just being paranoid or something but then..”

“Then what?” Cole asked looking impatient.

“Then when I went towards the stream to drink water I sensed someone behind me but as soon as I turned around I found no one. But the weird part is I smell bloody rusty smell near this area. I have checked each and every corner here but I found nothing suspicious but still it’s like mind is telling me that something is wrong in here. My wolf seems agitated all of a sudden”.

I stood up from my seat feeling panicked ” Cole where is Aderyn?” I asked with worry filled in my voice. Suddenly I wanted to see my mate. The feeling was killing me. I was being anxious all of a sudden. I was being anxious to avoid any trouble.

“She is outside” he said as he walked towards the window to look out.

“With whom?” I asked as panicked filled my emotions and my wolf paced around agitated. We both were feeling uneasy now.

“With no one” I didn’t even let him finish because the very next moment I used all my strength to reach Aderyn wherever she was.

“Alpha!” I knew Cole was behind me but I didn’t even bother to pay attention to his words because I was concentrating somewhere else. My Aderyn.

“Surround and put guards everywhere near the house” was all I said to Cole before running in all my strength leaving him behind.

“Aderyn!” I called in relief when I found her sitting on the chair in the lawn reading a book. She looked up at me and smiled but gave me a confused look when she saw me looking restless.

I sighed in relief and slowly walked towards her.

“What’s wrong?” she asked when I sat next to her.

“Nothing” I smiled and took a strand of her hair curling it between my fingers.

“Liar! Tell me what’s wrong. I can feel some strange agitated emotions inside me and I know it’s not mine. It’s your right?” she asked tilting her head to a side.

“That was right. She could feel my emotions just like I could feel hers. Maybe I should tell her. But she may freak out” I thought but regretted soon when she gave me a narrowed eyes look.

“Tell me what?” she asked because she heard my thoughts.

“You are so stupid, I swear” Black growled at me.

“Umm it’s nothing” I said and looked around trying to sense for any threats or anything mischievous. When I found none I got up from my seat and looked down at her.

“Aderyn just know this” I said as I kept my hand on her head.

“I love you and I will go to any extent for keeping you safe okay?”

She smiled at me and nodded.

“Okay now please go inside and don’t come out of the house until I tell you to” I said and hoped for her not to argue on this.

Surprisingly she didn’t. Perhaps her sensing my emotions made her cautious.

“Dylan is everything alright?” she asked looking little worried.

“Don’t worry, I promise I will make everything alright if it not” I said and leaned down to peck her forehead.

She exhaled a breath but nevertheless got up.

“Are you going somewhere?”

“Hmm. Don’t wait for me. I may take time” I said and looked towards the woods but what I heard made my heart flutter.

“I would wait no matter what” was what she thought in her mind.

“What?” she asked confused as to why I was staring at her.

“You know what?” I said not able to held back my emotions I engulfed her into a tight hug.

“It will be more overwhelming if I hear that coming out from your mouth. But I am happy that at least I’m in your thoughts” I said and she finished “Every time” in her mind. It made me even more happy.

“Ugh! How do I stop it?” she said as she pushed me away hiding her face using her palm flustered and embarrassed.

“At least you can pretend that you didn’t hear anything” she whined and turned around walking towards the house. I chuckled at her reaction and waited till she reached the door. But before she entering she turned to look at me and narrowed her eyes and shook her head childishly before getting back inside.

I smiled at her and after knowing that she was safe I turned towards the woods.

“Time to take care of your duties Black” I said and jumped into the air shifting into my wolf.

“I know” he said and shook his head before running into the woods towards Blake.

It took us fifteen minutes to reach where Blake was. We would have reached him in seconds but we decided to monitor each and every place on our way for anything suspicious. Black was always strict on this type of matter.

It was the same place where I found Aderyn the last time she tried to escape.

“King” Blake bowed seeing Black and Black nodded walking towards the stream.

“Shift!” Black asked Blake looking towards the stream.

In seconds he shifted into his wolf and the wolf shook its head to dust its fur.

“I sense something unusual” Black growled twitching it’s ear not liking it.

“Me too” Darroy Blake’s wolf said as it looked around with it’s ear forward occasionally twitching it.

Black walked towards the stream and looked into the water. The water seemed normal but if it wasn’t for my power I would have thought the same misunderstanding it as normal.

“A strange but familiar essence” Black growled as it leaned down and sniffed the water.

“I smell Blood” he growled even more and looked up and gave out a long angry howl.

“King!” Darroy whimpered lowering it’s body and looked at Black with it’s dilated pupil tucking it’s tail between it’s leg. It even had it’s ear back showing submission.

Black began to loosen up a little seeing Darroy’s condition but remained feeling uneasy as it’s thoughts remained flowing back to it’s mate’s safety.

“Cole!” Black called in mind.

“Yes Alpha!” came an instant reply from Cole.

“Keep an eye on the perimeter and alert everyone. Something is off. Until I find it ask everyone to stay inside the house and also ask alert Bell and Jenny to guard Aderyn. No one except for them is to allowed near Aderyn until I ask for it” Black said and Cole said a “Yes” before doing as he was told to do.

“Lily!” Black mind linked Lily and immediately a startled “Yes Alpha” came as a reply.

“Guard your Queen from distance” Black ordered and heard her “Yes” before disconnecting the link.

“Should we cancel the ceremony?” Darroy asked to which Black growled lowly.

“No. The ceremony will be held tomorrow. It will be better if we get the other wolves knowing about there Queen. They will join and will want to keep their Queen safe which will be good for the Kingdom and as well as Aderyn.”

“But before that” Black closed it’s eye gathering all the elemental power he had.

“I need to purify this place” he said and opened it’s eyes which were now turned into red glowing ones and as soon as it’s eyes opened a wave of power hit the place surrounding the wood and nearby.

“Purify” Black howled and the power stroke the wood and the stream in lightening speed cocooning the area into a wave of sound and light purifying the air.

A gash formed on Black’s paw for using so much strength in one motion. It lowered it’s head and licked it’s nozzle before huffing and panting lightly.

“Are you alright King?” Darroy asked as it sat on it’s hind leg looking worried.

“I will be when I find the source” Black said in his thicker beastly tone before standing straight with it’s head high.

“And when I find it” Black’s red eyes glowed with anger “I will shred it into pieces destroying it for even thinking of to intrude into my territory.”

Chapter 51

Dylan Pov

“Is everything guarded?” I asked for the umpteenth time rolling my sleeves down.

“Yes, Alpha! Every place is guarded. The alphas have already arrived and their betas are guarding the perimeter in order to save their queen.

“Is Aderyn ready?” I asked and he nodded.

“She is among the female warriors. Bella is there with her.”

“Okay. You can go and ask Jenny to be with Aderyn the whole time until the ceremony gets over” I said and he nodded.

“Don’t worry King. Everything will be just fine” Cole told me giving me an assuring smile and I nodded.

“But it is still disturbing me that the seniors have still not shown up” I muttered feeling confused.

“I think they will after Luna gets crowned,” he told me which made me feel little better.

“Hmm!” I hummed in response.

We went towards the back of the house where the ceremony was supposed to happen. I could feel the power radiating from the Alphas from all around the world were gathered up here just to have a glimpse of their Queen.

Aderyn is going to be crowned today and from today onwards she will be officially getting the position of the Queen beside me and she will remain right next to me until my death. She will continue to hold her position even after my death till the kingdom gets a new King or Queen that will be our son or daughter.

I looked towards the way where Aderyn was to come and waited patiently till I sniffed her fragrance in the air that she had finally arrived.

I saw her walking towards me wearing a beige colored dress with her hair side braided. Absolutely Gorgeous was my remark when she looked up and smiled at me.

I smiled back and when she was just a few steps away from me I reached forward and engulfed her into my arms. She squealed and giggled returning the hug. The female warriors who came with her looked away, all flushed.

“You are going to be my other half rightfully from today. Are you ready?” I asked and I felt her nodding.

“Absolutely!” she said.

“You will have been next to me till my death. Are you ready?” I asked and felt her stiffening.

“I don’t like hearing the word ‘death’ but I promise I will be next to you always till my death” her answer made my heart flutter.

“You have to bear the throne with me and it won’t be easy at times. Are you ready?” I asked remembering the same question asked by my father when I was throne as the prince.

“If bearing the throne means I could stay next to you then I will be more than happy to bear it,” she said with a laugh which made me holding her to me even mode tightly.

“Not only the throne, but you have to bear me too,” I said and turned both of around where the female warriors couldn’t see what I was going to do.

I held her face and bent down capturing her lips with mine. She held my hand which was on her face and returned the kiss with passionately matching my pace.

“I can’t wait to get you” I whispered touching her forehead with mine.

“I am already yours,” she said and that made me, even more, crazier than I was before.

“It’s funny how you make me fall in love with even more than I’m really am,” I told her which made her chuckle.

“And its funny how I keep getting back to you,” she said which made me chuckle.

“Let’s go. Everyone is waiting to get a glimpse of their Queen” I told her and she nodded. Though she looked anything but nervous still I tried to feel her comfortable around and assured her that everything was going to be okay.

The music played and the everyone present in the ceremony bowed their head showing respect to their King and soon to be Queen.

“Now I’m little nervous” I heard Aderyn through the mind link so I squeezed her hand assuring her that I was with her.

We walked towards the stage and we walked the Alphas and their Lunas present there bowed down their head saying “Your Highness!”

“Long live the King!”

“Long live the Queen”

But unlike the other few times when I met them, this time their eyes were directed only towards Aderyn. They looked extremely happy and pleased to meet their Queen.

We both reached the middle of the stage and I heard Aderyn gasping at the view. There were thousands of werewolves present in the ceremony including the eleven witches who were bowing their head in respect and submission.

“Raise your head” I commanded and everyone stood straight from their position attentively.

Then it was Blake who spoke.

“I am pleased to be here to deliver the speech for the throne, a warm welcome to all of the people who are attending the auspicious day when the werewolf kingdom finally gets its Queen after a long period of the time. I, Blake Darroy Ritson hereby feel honored to throne Miss Aderyn Brookes as our Queen. The air, wind and water are the sole witnesses of me crowning her as our new Luna Queen.”

“Now we all shall let our wolves take our place to witness the crowning, ” he said and soon every werewolf present jumped into the air and shifted into their werewolf form including Blake.

A lady walked to us holding a tray and I took the knife from the tray and slit my palm letting the blood bleed through it. Before it could heal itself I turned toward and Aderyn and nodded at her.

“What am I supposed to do?” she asked through mind link.

“Drink it,” I told her to which she gave me a look.

She looked back at the mass of werewolves and then back at me.

“Don’t worry. I’m right here with you” I told her and she nodded. She took a step forward and took hold of my hand and suck the blood from my hand.

As soon as she did that the werewolves raised there head up and howled in joy and delight because now Aderyn was there new Luna Queen.

She stopped sucking and looked up. I saw a silver rim around her iris which was the proof of her being the new Queen and the ceremony was over.

I looked up at the clouds.

“They are still not here,” I thought thinking about the seniors.

“What are you thinking?” she asked and I looked back at my Luna smiling at her.

“Nothing!” I told her.

“I, Dylan Black Bishop accept Aderyn Brookes as my Luna Queen and from now onwards she has the whole right on me and the werewolf kingdom. In my absence, her decision will be final” I said feeling proud that finally, Aderyn was a part of me.

“I, Aderyn Brookes feel honored to be able to be your Queen. I promise to take care of the werewolf kingdom and Dylan till my last breath even if I’m just a mere human. I, Aderyn Brookes accept Dylan Black Bishop as my mate and my Alpha King” she said and as soon as she said that we both felt the various emotions and strange power flowing within our body. It was the feeling of being accepted, it was their power which was transferred to our body because from now on we were the father and mother of the werewolf kind.

“I feel strong” I heard her whispering to herself looking at her own hands.

I smiled and wrapped an arm around her waist pulling her close.

“You feel strong and I feel complete,” I said which made her smile.

******

Chapter 52

Dylan Pov

“Congratulations King” Marc the Alpha of Bloodmoon pack said and I nodded.

“We are finally having our Queen after a long period of time,” he said and the other Alphas nodded in agreement.

“It looks like we will never get our turn to greet our new Queen” Alex the Alpha of Dark Wolves pack said looking behind me and we looked following his gaze to see Aderyn circled by the Lunas of the different pack.

She kept on looking here and there as the Lunas bombarded her with their questions. She was having trouble answering everyone’s answer.

I sipped the wine from my glass and smirked at her when she looked towards me.

“What are you doing there? Come here and save me” she yelled at me through mind link.

“Why? I thought you were brave and you could handle almost everything in this world. So..?” I teased her and chuckled when she glared at me.

“Dylan” she warned.

“It looks like our King is having a personal conversation with our Queen” Marc said making the others laugh.

“No it’s not like that,” Alex said and we turned towards him.

“He is looking at her probably thinking how to get her alone. I mean cmon we all know what happens when somebody is introduced to the pack. But here it’s totally different, it’s our King and the Queen. So..” he said and everyone looked at me.

“He is right. It’s finally the time to mate” Black said hoping here and there wiggling his tail in my mind.

“Indeed!” I said and sipped my wine glancing at Aderyn’s way.

She looked at me still answering the Lunas question and raised her eyebrow at me questionably for why I was looking at her.

I smirked at her to which she narrowed her eyes at me.

“What’s with your smirk?” she asked.

“You will know,” I said and turned around towards the Alphas.

“Excuse me,” I said and they all nodded.

I walked back towards the house and mind linked Blake.

“What’s going on?” I asked.

“Yes! Everything is under check here” he said. He was out on patrolling again.

“Good. Time to swap the guards and the Betas. The Betas need some rest now. Ask them to return back to the house. They can meet their Queen at night. Replace the warriors in their place and Cole will be leaving for your place in some minutes, you can retreat back too” I said.

“As you say, King,” he said and I frowned.

“You are calling me King a lot lately,” I said and heard him chuckling.

“That’s because you gave the most desirable gift to the kingdom. The Queen” he said and I smiled at it.

“It’s all thanks to you two actually. If it weren’t for you and Cole then I probably would have lost Aderyn from the beginning. I was fool back then” I said and heard his laughter.

“What’s so funny?” I asked.

“Nothing! It’s just really rare to hear you agreeing on your faults” he said and though I wanted to smack his head I found myself chuckling.

“I’m on my way back to the house,” he said and I hummed in response before we cut the link.

“Aderyn” I called and instantly she replied.

“Yeah? Where are you?” She asked to which I chuckled.

“Oh, so you did notice my absence. Missing me Aderyn?” I asked and heard her huffing at me.

“Shut up Dylan. Where are you?” She asked.

“I am inside in our room. Come here” I told her.

“What are you doing there?” she asked.

“I want to show you something. Come here” I said and rubbed the back of my neck.

“What do you want to show?” she asked and I pursed my lips.

“It’s personal. You come here and I will show you” I told her.

“Okay. I am coming” she said.

“Finally!” I said and got up from the bed where I was sitting.

I looked at myself in the mirror and adjusted my jacket properly. I styled my hair once again even though it was perfectly fine.

All of a sudden I felt nervous.

“What’s wrong with you Dylan? Why are you behaving like this?” I muttered to myself as I felt my heart beat raising when I smelt her fragrance in the air.

“She is near,” Black said wiggling his tail.

“I know!” I said.

“She is close,” Black said and I closed my eyes sniffing her heavenly fragrance.

“She is closer,” Black said and I groaned at Black.

“Shut up Black. You are not helping” I said and I could imagine the wolfish grin on his face.

“Here she is,” he said and the door of my room opened revealing my beautiful mate obviously oblivious to what was going on in my mind.

“Dylan,” she said.

Oh! How perfectly my name rolls out of her tongue. My name seems even more perfect when she says it.

“Dylan?” she called furrowing her eyebrows when I stayed rooted to my position admiring her beautiful face and figure.

“Hey what’s wrong?” she asked all of a sudden looking concerned.

Finally, I have someone who would worry for me. It’s been so long to feel that I am finally needed. Needed, not only for fulfilling my duties but also for someone who would long to see me whenever I am late, worrying for my good being.

Finally, I am having someone who would only care about me.

“Finally,” I said and she raised her eyebrows not understanding.

“What is it that you wanted to show?” She asked as she took a step closer towards me.

“He wants to show you his di*k” Black interfered.

Aderyn’s eyes widened hearing him.

“The hell Black. Thank You very much for ruining the moment. You Idiot!” I said irritated and he lowered his ears tilting his head not understanding.

“What? Why are you mad at me? I stated the obvious” he argued and I scoffed at his foolishness.

“Uh! I forgot something. I am coming in a second” Aderyn said and turned around wanting to leave the room.

“She heard you” I snapped at Black.

“Oh!” was his reply.

Aderyn turned the knob to walk out but in a flash, I was right behind her closing the door back my hand on her.

“Where are you going?” I whispered into her ear as I leaned over her from her back and wrapped my other hand around her waist pulling her closer.

“D-Dylan” she whispered which made me chuckle.

“Are you scared?” I asked placing a kiss on her cheek.

I felt her tightening her grip on the knob. I took hold of her hand and pulled her hand from the knob.

“Dylan. Are you in control?” she asked and I could hear her heart beat beating vigorously.

“Physically yes but not in sense” I whispered huskily into her ear.

“Dyl-” she said but I cut her off.

“No! Don’t say anything” I said and in one motion lifted her up in the air and scooted her up into my arms.

She clutched onto my collar and I walked towards the bed.

“You make crazy,” I said as I placed her softly on the bed.

She clutched on the sheets visibly scared.

I took hold of her hand and intertwined our finger before getting on top of her and lowering myself down until my lips brushed her soft ones.

I closed my eyes and felt the sparks that flew through my body only because of that mere touch. I kissed her softly at first and then passionately. Soon, she was responding to my kisses and I heard soft moaning which encouraged me even more.

I trailed down hungrily towards her neck sucking and biting her skin.

As I descended down her skin we both jerked up in shock when we heard people screaming from outside.

“What’s going on?” Aderyn said and I got up from her.

“What’s going on?” I asked Blake through the mind link.

“Blake?” I called but got no reply.

“Cole?” I asked and got no reply.

“Stay here,” I told Aderyn and walked towards the door.

“Dylan wait! I am coming with you” she said running after me.

“No! Stay here” I said but she got hold of my hand stopping me.

“What’s going on Dylan? I am coming with you” she said adamantly.

“Aderyn,” I said and held her by her arms.

“You need to stay here okay? I will just go and see what’s happening out there. But I need you safe. Please remain here until I come back for you” I told her and before she could say anything, I lowered myself down and pecked her lips and then on her forehead.

“Stay here!” I said and though I didn’t want to leave her, I had to.

“It’s not good. I smell blood” Black said and he stood up from his position alarmed ready to change if needed.

I ran out of the house and was shocked as well devastated to see the scenario in front of me.

Some people were lying on the ground senseless while some were turned into their wolf forms. Some looked injured and the human mates were crying seating next to their mate’s bloodied form.

“What’s going on?” I muttered.

“King! King!” I heard Blake mind linking me.

“Blake?” I answered.

“King” he sobbed in the mind link and it worried me even more.

“It’s Cole. Cole is not opening his eyes” he sobbed and was just going to ask what has happened, I sensed Aderyn behind me.

“Dylan!” She said as she looked at the people before her.

“Aderyn!” I called and she took a step towards me.

One moment she was before me and the other moment she was nowhere in sight.

I stood there shocked and in confusion thinking what just happened. But when it registered what just happened the ground beneath me rocked and trembled for I was angry. Mad, that my mate was taken away from me before my own eyes, within my territory.

“Aderyn” I screamed her name with my power radiating off my body like a tsunami hitting the place causing destruction.

*****

Chapter 53

Blake Pov

Everything was going perfectly. The kingdom found its Queen, my king was happy after a long period time, he finally found his own family until the incident that turned our lives upside down. Nobody would have ever guessed that this would happen nor anyone would ever have imagined to even witness this.

But what we are witnessing now, one would only pray to the heavenly lords yo never witness this ever in its lifetime. The wrath of our king.

It happened so fast that no one could do anything. The destruction before me is what no one would ever wish to see. Our king, Dylan Black Bishop in his destruction form emitting his power out of his body in a horrendous way. Scary, terrible extremely unpleasant were the words to describe our king in the moment.

He looked ready to destroy everything. Every single little thing.

I was just returning back to the spot where I had left Cole the last time but what I saw made me all shocked and for the first time in my life I felt fear and scared because Cole was the strongest one in the kingdom and his condition told something different.

Who did this to him?

I saw a wolf body lying from far and from the smell I understood that it was Cole's wolf Spenvee. But what made me cringe was the smell of blood so, I hurried to him and there in the ground was Spenvee huffing out blood and was barely breathing. There were three claw marks on its rib and fresh blood was oozing out of its legs.

"Spenvee! Spenvee" I yelled as I knelt down next to it and took its head on my lap.

"Cole! Do you hear me? What happened?" I cried but Cole's wolf answered in a whimper and blood dripped out of its mouth on my lap to the ground.

"What the?"

"Who this to you?" I cried and tried to pat the wolf's head trying to make it open its eyes but it didn't. But it was still breathing. My heart feared for its best friend. Cole and I were always together even longer than Dylan. Cole was my first best friend. We turned into shapeshifters together, we fought and practiced together, we even worked out together and today seeing the strongest werewolf alive in this earth in such a condition made me feel scared all of a sudden.

I decided to mind link King immediately explaining about Cole, that he is just not opening his eyes. This is bad. Because the kingdom is celebrating at the moment and every single powerful alphas of the world are present in the ceremony. If anything happens to them than the whole werewolf kind will be in danger.

But most importantly I fear for our queen, Aderyn. If anything happens to her, the king would lose it.

I told King in the mind link about everything but I was shortly cut off from the link when I heard people screaming.

“D-Danger” I heard Cole’s voice in my mind.

“Cole! What happened buddy? You alright? Please open your eyes!” I yelled.

“S-Save h-her!” he said and I saw as Spenvee began to shape shift back into its human form.

“Cole!” I cried as soon as Cole’s human form appeared before me.

“Cole! Cole! Open your eyes” I begged.

“Th-ey want her. T-They want to destroy our K-King!” he said in the mind link.

“Who is it? Cole!” I yelled and took out a handkerchief from my pocket. Though it was just a mere piece of cloth I used it by applying it against Cole’s rib were blood was oozing out.

“Why is it not healing Cole?” I asked confused because the wound should have healed in a normal case.

“Take me to King!” he whispered.

“Open your eyes!” I ordered.

“I can’t! It’s important! Take me to King e-else we all shall die” he whispered making a chill run down my spine.

When I returned back to the house, the scenery before me made me devastated.

“What is going on?” I cried.

Blood was everywhere with wolf bodies and some wolves lay dead in their human form. Some were injured while some were crying sitting their dear ones.

“K-King!” I saw some alphas running towards our King who looked different.

“No! Don’t go near h-” Cyreana was cut off when a ball of power emitted out of Dylan’s body which sent us flying backward. The force was so strong that it nearly killed me when I was sent flying

backward but I was saved when I hit a tree trunk. Though it was painful but it was better than hitting a rock.

“Cole!” I yelled when I saw his body on the ground laying motionless.

I carried him here on my back but when the power hit me I lost my balance and let him slip out of my grasp.

“It’s okay! I got him already” I saw Cynthia one of the witches with her hands raised. I looked back at Cole and then only I noticed a green colored light surrounding him saving his body from King’s power.

“I don’t think that I can control it for much longer. The King needs to stop. He will kill everyone” she cried and I saw tears trickling down her cheeks. The power of king hurting her and the pain was becoming unbearable for her.

“What is going on?” I cried and saw as another wave of power hit us. It was King.

“It’s the Queen!” one of the Alpha yelled from all the bizarre that was going on.

“The Queen has been taken away from us,” he completed.

My eyes widened and I looked back at our King’s dark form. Eyes red, a black aura was surrounding his body almost like a cloak and his canines out with his claws ejecting out and in every time he emits more power.

I can’t even imagine what would happen now. The truth is Aderyn our Queen has been taken away from us by our invisible enemies and here the king is ready to destroy every single little thing. With so many werewolves injured and dead, I don’t even understand what to do at the moment. It was supposed to be my responsibility to handle everything in his absence but nobody ever taught me what to do in a situation like this. When the king himself is in the position to destroy everything.

“We need to stop him,” warned Cynthia.

“King!” I yelled.

“Your voice is not reaching him,” one of the alpha yelled.

“Try mind linking him,” Cynthia cried.

“King!” I tried to mind link but as soon as I did that I held my head in pain. I felt as if my brain going to blast.

“What happened?” Cynthia asked.

“My h-head it h-hurts” I cried out.

“His wolf is out of sanity now” Pearsyvia the wiser of the all the witches said and the other nodded agreeing with her.

“We need to calm him down first!” Pearsyvia said and everyone nodded.

“Okay! I would suggest every wolf back out to a safe region. We will work in synchronization and we will gather up our power till everyone reaches the safest region. Got it?” Pearsyvia asked and the other witches replied “Got it!” in unison.

“Run till you reach the safest region!” Pearsyvia said.

“I will try to teleport Cole but not to a greater distance. You will have to carry him” Cynthia said to me and I nodded.

Cole lied down on the ground still motionless but I could still hear his heartbeat, it means he was still alive but he needs medical treatment quick and fast.

“Okay on the count of three!” Pearsyvia said and I watched as she began to gather up all her powers by raising and circulating her hands in a rhythmic motion until a green light occurred out of nowhere.

“One!” she said and we all got ready to run away.

I saw as some of the werewolves changed themselves and they carried their mates or injured ones on their back for the run.

“Two!”

I positioned myself for running. The temperature suddenly becoming high and sweats formed on my skin. Only because of King’s power.

“Three!”

We all sprinted towards the woods and I saw Cole getting teleported. I knew I would find him in the wood where I had to carry him. So, I sprinted using all of my werewolf sprinting into the woods. Never have had I ever imagined that one day we all would need to run away from our own king.

The witches gathered up their power to form a barrier against King’s radiating power and us saving us from him. We all knew that they wouldn’t be able to keep this up for too much so we all used our strength to run faster.

As I was running, I saw a white ball of light forming and I saw as the ball took a shape of a body and it fell on the grassy area. It was Cole.

Sprinting more further, I came to a halt before his unconscious self and took hold of him.

“I will help!” I saw the alpha of the Pinewood Pack lifting Cole with his one arm while I supported his another.

“Thank You!” feeling glad that he stopped for help and together we dragged Cole with us away towards the safer region.

“Do you think everything must be under control?” Derrick the alpha of Pinewood pack asked.

It’s already been seven hours till we have sprinted away. Cole has been given medical treatment by the pack doctor and Jenny was still beside him crying her eyes out seeing his condition. But he was still unconscious. He needs to gain his consciousness back because he could give some information about what has happened for he was the sole witness.

“We have to wait till the witches signal us to come back!” I said looking back towards the way we came from.

The sun has set down and we were sitting near the stream where the wounded ones were being looked after by the pack doctors.

“I don’t sense any power radiation anymore!” Derrick said and I nodded not feeling King’s power.

“Has they succeeded in taking him down?” a woman from the pack asked.

“No one can take the king down,” sneered Lily as she walked towards us glancing at Cole once.

“Can’t you see? It’s already late in the evening and yet they haven’t been able to cool him down” she said and looked down to the ground. Her eyes devoid of any emotions.

“I feel scared now. I don’t ever want to witness his power again,” she whispered.

Exactly after three more hours of waiting, we saw a light forming like a wave and it fell on us. We all heard a faint voice saying “Come back!”

We all walked back towards the house. Some were limping, while some still looked terrified thinking what if King is still not in control, and some looked in a hurry because they desperately wanted to see their King.

Like them, I was too scared but remembering my post and my duties I held up myself and prepared myself for whatever I was going to see.

I vowed that I would serve the king until the end, and it was what I was going to do.

When we reached there, we saw all the witches surrounding someone. It was undoubtedly King's body. At first, I thought maybe his power drained out of his body for emitting so much and now he was laying there unconscious but I was proved wrong.

My heart clenched in pain and in anger seeing his condition. After ages, I was again seeing him in such a condition.

He laid down on the grassy ground crying. Our King was devastated for the loss of his only love. For the loss of his only happiness, for his only family. Aderyn.

Tears trickled down his eyes as he stared blankly towards the sky crying and sobbing not caring that he was pouring his emotions out, nor caring that everyone was watching him, not caring that he was being weak at the moment.

"Come back to me Aderyn. Please," he whispered.

My fist formed into a ball and my jaws locked tightly in anger. I wasn't angry because he was being weak but on them who made my king like this. When I looked towards my side to see other people's reaction, I saw the same thing in their eyes. Revenge was what one could read from their facial expression.

They wanted revenge because someone has hurt their king. They all looked ready to kill because someone has caused harm to their King and Queen.

Nobody held pity or sympathy for the king's loss but there was a mutual promise between all the werewolves that they need to pay.

At the moment I came to know one thing. If someone harms the kingdom, the King saves his kind and people but if someone harms the King, the kingdom comes down to the field with only one thing in mind. Revenge for hurting our King.

****

Chapter 54

Aderyn Pov

Tumbling down the street,

I found a person whom I wanted to meet.

Guess what I did,

Brought the person up to a foot.

Nobody will find you,

Nobody can ever find you.

What will you do? What will you do?

I am not a nice person whom you ever wanna meet.

Don't be scared, don't be scared,

You won't even know when you will pass away.

Cause I'm a bad person. Yes, I'm a bad person.

Yes! My mom had told me that I'm a bad person.

"Remove the fold from my eyes!" I told the person who was singing.

"I'm a bad person" the woman continued singing but I heard some shuffling sound before the fold was removed from eyes.

It took me some seconds to adjust my eyes to the surrounding.I looked here and there but mostly, to the dome-shaped ceiling. I found my body tied up to a table like something. I couldn't really quite see where I was tied down. The rope went from above my chest circling the table or whatever where I was being tied up. My legs were tied down from the side. The place had dim light but I could see candles all over the place. From my peripheral vision, I could see someone moving but couldn't really see the person. The weirdest thing was, the whole place had this bloody stink and the place had some type of circular drawing all over the ground, roof, and wall.

Then my eyes fell on the person whom I guessed was the person who had tied me there.

The woman wearing a white cloak was lighting some candles near the wall with her back facing me still murmuring the weird song.

“What do you want?” I asked with my dried hoarse voice.

She stopped singing and I watched as she took a candle and blew on it and then she turned.

A short gasp left my mouth when I saw her face. She was just a teenager. But the horrible part was the side of the face. The left part of her face was actually ripped off. Like, something or somebody who had clawed on her face. The wounds looked fresh and blood was still visible from the place.

“I’m a bad person” she sang as she walked to my direction.

“Stay away!” I said but she chose to ignore me and she came, even more, closer still singing the song.

“Who are you?” I asked once she reached near me. She stood near my body and she looked directly into my eyes. Her gray eyes boring into mine. She looked scary but she was young.

“What happened to your face?” I asked as she smiled and took a seat on a chair next to my head. I had to move in an odd position to look at her.

“You want to know?” she questioned as she kept her head on her palm with her elbow resting on her lap.

I kept quiet and waited till she spoke. All the while, I tried avoiding the bloodied side of her face. It was disturbing watching the blood dripping from her face to her neck. How was she not even worried about it?

“Dylan Black Bishop” she spoke enunciating each name as if it was sour to her mouth. She spat on the ground and then on my face. I closed my eyes feeling terrible that she spat on me. She had sucked her own dripping blood and she had spat on my face.

“Gross?” she sang.

“I feel the same thing whenever I look myself in the mirror, I feel gross. know why? All because of your mate Dylan Black Bishop” she got up from her place and I heard as the chair fell down because of the impact that she used when she got up.

“What had he done?” I asked opening my eyes slowly and blinking few times.

My condition was not really good right now. From gesture and posture, I had come to the point that the girl was actually a psycho. She behaved like a psycho, she looked like a psycho.

“What he had done? What he had done?” she screamed in rage as she moved closer to me and she got hold my hair pulling them tightly which instantly got me wincing in pain.

“Look at my face. Bloody look at my face what he had done” she snarled before letting me go.

Had Dylan done this to her? Why?

“What did you even do that had made Dylan do this?” I asked and watched as she looked at me as if she was going to kill me.

“Wow! so you are the romantic type of stupid human who would choose to trust her soul mate no matter what,” she said in sarcasm.

“I know him. He won’t do anything without any reason. So what did you do?” I asked and watched as she nodded before laughing like a maniac.

“Very well! Fine! You are right! I have actually done something which resulted in me this” she gestured her face.

“Do you know what I did?” she asked as she played with her fingers and I watched as the chair from beforehand which had tumbled down getting up on its own.

“So you are a witch!” I thought.

“Yes, I am a witch! And you are smart. Actually too smart for my liking!” she said as she took a seat.

“And no! I can’t really read your mind. I just guessed what you must be thinking!” she said checking her nails.

“I don’t really care what you are and who you are,” I told her and watched as she smirked at me.

“Well, you must know” she sang.

“I am the one who killed his parents,” she said which almost made me gasp in shock. But I didn’t. I was indeed in a shock hearing that.

She is that wicked witch who killed his parents?

But she was killed by the other witches.

How is she here?

“But I thought-” she cut me off “dead?” she said and laughed hysterically.

“You all are so dumb” she laughed.

“No wonder my mother calls me bad” she looked at the corner of the room. Her eyes sorrowful and distant.

I wondered what has made her like this.

“Why am I here?” I asked breaking her from her little world.

“Revenge?” she said more like a question.

“What?” I asked.

“Yes! You heard me right! For revenge. Dylan Black Bishop is going to pay for what he has done to me. He will be paying for turning all the witches and even my mom against me. He is going top pay for disowning me from the special Twelve witches clan and he is going to pay for this” she pointed at her face.

“You got what you deserved. You killed his parents. You brought disgrace to your own clan. How could you even think of killing your own Queen and King?” I questioned which brought a smile to her face.

“Queen? King? Those dogs? What a joke!” she laughed.

“Watch your tongue!” I snapped.

How dare she talk like this about Dylan’s parents.

“or what?” she mocked me.

“Why did you kill them? What did they even do to you?” I asked changing the subject. I wanted to know what made her take such a big step. I had heard that she used her powers to control some kind of demons to kill and attack the kingdom.

“They did nothing. Oh, nothing! In fact, I agree that they were the sweetest people you would ever meet. But the problem was, they are these people who can shapeshift into those massive dogs, which you call wolves and according to me, they are not really capable of ruling. It should be us, witches, who should rule, not those dogs” she said and I watched as she played with her finger.

“She is mad!” I thought.

“They do! They have the powe-”

“Nonsense! They don’t have power like me, like us, witches! Who even made them the ruler? They are nothing without us!” she screamed.

“And you are nothing without them!” I said.

She laughed at this.

“Says the human! Why am I even talking with a mere human?” she rubbed her neck.

“Humans are useless too!” she hissed and held the bridge of her nose.

“Anyways back to the point! How would you like to see your mate die?” she rubbed her palm and wiggled her eyebrows.

“What?” I questioned.

“I mean should I choke him to death, or should I” she made a thinking position “Burn him alive, Burry him alive or should I rip him alive?” she squealed.

“Rip him. I like the idea. It would be so much fun. Oh! Oh! no! no, don’t start crying. Please! You are my queen, and I can’t see you crying. Don’t worry, I know you are his mate and you can’t live without him. I will do what is right for the kingdom. I will kill you too. Then both of you will be together forever and I will get what I want” she smiled dreamingly.

“Really?” I asked.

“Yes! This time I am prepared!” she said and from my peripheral vision, I saw something moving again. And from the darkness emerged a dirty vampire looking demon like man stinking bloodied and very badly. It had no eyeballs, but had canine-like teeth, the shape of a human but I saw insects on its cheek and some parts of the body. The insects were eating its flesh. It was as if the thing rose up from a coffin or tomb. Looked scary as hell. It even scared me.

“This time I have thousands of them” she laughed.

The thing or demon growled like an animal and it shook its head and licked its teeth looking at me.

“No! No!” she said and I watched a lightning ring circled the demon and the demon disappeared within a second.

“You can’t eat or touch her. Because I need to use her as a bait for the dog of a King” she laughed and rose her cloak in the air before vanishing into the air.

I looked here and there thinking what just happened.

Then I rested on wherever I was tied down. All of a sudden, I laughed. I laughed like a maniac.

“We will see,” I said between the waves of laughter.

“What a joke! She thinks she can kill my Dylan. She seriously needs a psychiatrist. Oh my god! What a maniac!” I laughed clutching the rope that held me down tightly.

*****

Chapter 55

Dylan Pov

“I don’t even know where she is!” I punched the table so hard that it went flying until it smashed against the glass window of my office room breaking the window glass into pieces. The glasses shattered into pieces and some even pierced my skin because of the impact of force that I used to throw the table. The skin on my face healed as immediately as it got punctured by those glass pieces.

“You need to calm down my lord!” Pearsyvia said as I rubbed my face by my hands.

“Calm? Are you asking me to calm down? Are you ignorant of the state that I am right now Cynthia?” I growled and she took a step back lowering her head.

“King!” Pearsyvia walked inside the room with Blake following her.

“What is it?” I asked and from my peripheral vision watched as Estelle who standing near the door walking towards the window and repairing it back to its original form using her power.

“As you had ordered I have asked all the eleven witches to gather up downstairs. Eight witches are downstairs except me, Cyreana and Estelle. The wounded Wolves and the alphas have been taken care of and Lord Cole is also doing well under the healer’s supervision. The Alphas who are fine and non-effected by the previous incident have been also asked to gather downstairs. Shall we?” she asked raising her hand and indicating to join the meeting.

“We shall!” I nodded and walked out of the room with them following me.

This was going to be an important meeting for everyone in the werewolf kingdom. We will be trying to locate our enemies and hopefully, we will find my Aderyn very soon. My heart hurts and I heard Black whining in my head think about his mate. I swore if I saw a single scratch on her body then I would shatter my enemy, whoever he or she is into pieces.

“King!” everyone bowed their head down when I entered the room.

“Take a seat!” I told everyone and they all nodded before taking the seat on their chair. It was like a conference meeting. Everybody was seated on the chair next to each other and facing me. The witches chose to sit on one side together while the Alphas chose to sit on the other side of the long table. The Betas chose to stand due to the shortage of space and I moved my chair to the side not wanting to sit.

“We all are here gathered up for a reason and I assume everyone present in here already knows the reason,” I said and watched as everyone present inside the room nodded their head.

“All of a sudden the welcome ceremony of our Queen turned into our worst nightmares with our Queen missing right before our eyes. She was kidnapped right before us and we couldn’t even do anything. Especially I failed to protect my mate and my Queen” I said clenching my fists in anger.

“Not only did we lose our Queen but also our fellow Alpha mates and some wolves from our kingdom. My condolence to their pack and family. I am proud that they stood against our enemies till their end and for that, the whole werewolf kingdom shall always remain grateful towards them. They shall always remain in our hearts. We shall take a moment of silence to pray for their soul” I told and everyone stood up and we all closed our eyes and prayed for the those who lost their lives. They were brave, courageous and strong to fight against the enemies who attacked us like a coward out of nowhere. Their deaths shall not go in vain, I made a promise to myself.

The screeching noises of the chair were heard when the people chose to seat down after the prayer. For a minute, I stood there in silence thinking what to say. I was out of words because I was in dilemma. I couldn’t understand how to motivate my people when I didn’t even know who my enemy was. It would have been so easy if we knew who were our enemies. If anything I wanted to do then it was to run out of the place, out of my kingdom until I find where they had kept my Aderyn. I believed my wolf sense would help me in this case because I could smell her scent from miles afar and that way I could easily find her. But the problem was I didn’t know if they were close to us or at the end of the world. If that is so, then it would take me days maybe months or years to find her and I didn’t really want that to happen. I wanted my Aderyn right next to me as soon as possible because not only me but my whole kingdom needs their Luna.

“King?” I heard Blake whispering to me from beside me which broke me out of my thoughts.

“Hmm? Oh! I’m sorry! I was thinking something” I said and everyone looked at each other and gave me an understanding look.

It really helped me that my people understood me. They felt my pain, they knew how I was feeling. It was a bond that only we werewolves had that is why we were so strong unlike humans or any other kind. Bond of a family is a pure and strong bond in this world, for it gives you strength and support in the time of need. Unity is the biggest strength and me being a werewolf understood it very prominently.

“We-” the door of the room opened and a healer interfered by walking in. But what got everyone’s attention was Cole walking inside the room limping in one leg and his body supported by the healer himself.

“Cole?” I said and immediately walked up to him with Blake following me. Everyone present inside the room was looking at us as I reached next to a wounded Cole and held his another arm over my shoulder giving him support.

“What in the world are you doing here? You should be on the be-” Cole cut off Blake in the middle speaking “King! King, I have got something important to tell you!” he coughed in the last.

“Cole! I don’t think you should pressurize your bod-”

“No! Please listen to me. It is really important!” he even argued with me.

“Here! Please let him sit down!” one of the witches whose name was Annika offered her chair for Cole to sit down. We made Cole sit down on the chair and Cole thanked the kind Witch before looking up at me.

“Cole!” Jenny came running inside the room and knelt right before Cole.

“Baby what are you doing here? You should be rest-” Cole even cut her off.

“Please everyone I am fine now. I have an important thing to tell you. Please tell me speak until the end” he said and everyone silenced waiting eagerly for him to speak.

“I know who is our enemies!” he said and gasps of people was in the room with people gossiping about it with themselves.

“Silence please!” Blake politely asked the people and again the room was silenced as Cole coughed quite a few times while I stood there with my jaw tightly clenched and I shoved my balled fists inside my pant pockets not wanting to look aggravated by the situation. The temperature of the room suddenly raised up because of the heat radiating out of my tensed body.

“Who is it?” Blake urged Cole and I watched as he sucks in a deep breath and closes his eyes. He looked nervous.

Why is he nervous?

“It is Edna!” he said in one breath. People gasped and I heard as some stood up in anger and the chair falling down due to the sudden impact. The room’s temperature radiated even more because not only me but everyone was beyond angry.

“I thought she was dead!” we heard Derrick the alpha of Pinewood pack growling in anger.

“That witch!” we heard another one cursing her name.

Hearing her name after a long time brought the raw painful memories back in my mind. Edna Hunter was the twelfth Witch. Not only that she was the witch who killed my parents. She believed that she was the strongest and she should be the one to rule the kingdom not me or my

family because she thought us as weak animals. She despised and loathed our kind. Back then, it was a sudden surprise attack on us which resulted in her to kill my parents. She actually targeted to kill me, but unfortunately for her, she couldn't because my kind and the other loyal witches were protecting me. I thought she was killed before us. The witches killed her. Then how is she back?

My eyes trailed off to one of the witches, 'Phoenix Hunter' who stood in the corner in the dark with her head lowered in shame hearing people cursing her own daughter.

Edna Hunter was her daughter. We thought being Edna's mother, Phoenix would support her daughter in the war but we were proved wrong and Phoenix showed her loyalty towards me by killing her own daughter with the other witches using her power. Everybody's eyes fixated on Phoenix wanting to see her expression.

"I am truly ashamed of her being my daughter my lord! I swear I don't have any idea or connection to how she survived. She brought disgrace to our kind and she shall be punished for not only going against the kind but also for kidnapping the Queen and for killing our fellow mates. I promise you, my lord, this time I wouldn't let her pass through my hand easily" Phoenix said and I watched as tears fell down her eyes as she disappeared in thin air leaving those tears which fell on the ground.

"I think Phoenix has betrayed us" I heard one of the alphas.

"Yes, I also think she saved her daughter! She is a traitor!" another one said.

"Nonsense! We all know Phoenix isn't like that. She stood with us in the fight and she even raised her own hand to kill her own daughter. She didn't betray us. Phoenix is loyal!" snapped Amber Sueffer another witch from the eleven powerful witches.

"My lord please, believe me, us Phoenix is loya-" I cut her off by raising my hand at her.

"You don't need to explain anything. I have never doubted any of the witches nor Phoenix. I have faith in her and even we all" I looked at the Alphas before continuing "we all trust Phoenix. Do we not?" I asked.

"But Alph-" I cut Derrick in the middle.

"It is not the time to raise ou fingers at each other. It is the time of unity. Regarding Phoenix, no mother would ever wish to kill her own blood let alone raise a finger on her child, but here Phoenix had proved her loyalty towards the kingdom by standing with us. She could have easily taken her daughter's side. What could you all have done if she took Edna's side back then? Nobody could have done anything and no one should question her loyalty when we all have witnessed what has happened in the past!" I said and watched as the witches nodded and a small smile crept up their faces.

“I understand what Phoenix must be going through right now. It is a sensitive case for her and we won’t mind if she chooses to stay away from the war. It is not easy to face your own blood in a war. We shall respect her decision in this matter” I said and the witches nodded agreeing.

“Thank you, my lord, for having faith in us!” Estelle spoke for the first time and I nodded at her.

“Now that we all know who our enemy is I believe it will easy for us to locate Aderyn now!” I said and everyone nodded.

“We wait for your command, my lord!” Estelle said and I inhaled deeply before saying.

“I command the witches to gather up and start the searching up process. Locate Edna’s position and try to find out how she survived the last time” I commanded and series of ‘Yes my lord!’ from the witches was heard.

“The Alphas are in the charge of the gathering up and training the wolves for the war. Prepare your packs and gather every pack together nd train them together for the war. No female wolf is to be allowed in the war. The female wolves are requested to guard the kingdom in our absence. Some pf the betas shall stay behind in the kingdom to guard the territory in our absence. It is no offense to the female wolves but I have made this decision because the female wolves need to protect the pups and the older ones in the kingdom. And with that, they must be trained by the betas to remain prepared if they were attacked behind our back. Betas will train every single female wolf so that if we need them they must be able to join us in the war. But till that it is for the kingdom’s future generation’s safety that the pups and the female wolves shall remain back in the kingdom” I said and watched as Jenny hugged Cole sobbing.

“Cole! You shall remain in the kingdom. You-” Jenny’s face lit up but at the same time Cole stood up from the chair despite the wounds he managed to act strongly before me.

“No Alpha! I shall join my King in the war. It will be shameful for a warrior not to accompany his king when the kingdom is in the state of war” Cole argued.

“I understand. I am not banning you from joining us but looking at your condition I have taken the decision that you shall remain here and concentrate on healing yourself for protecting the people in the kingdom” I said and before he could argue I silenced him by saying ” It’s an order!”

He nodded but judging from his body gestures and clenched jaws I knew he wouldn’t really do what I have ordered him to do. Perks of being the childhood best friend.

While everyone gossiped to each other and began to plan their strategy my mind trailed off to Aderyn.

“Have faith in me Aderyn! You will be back to me in no time. I promise!” I spoke to myself.

****

Chapter 56

Dylan Pov

"You are running too fast!" I told Black as he leaped over the thin stream of the river, passing the rocks he jumped and sprinted back into woods.

"I am no mood to talk human!" he said in his animal beasty tone.

I sighed and tried once more "Slow down already! It's been an hour since you are running. Slow down a little!" I told. My wolf seemed agitated due to the loss of his mate and some wolves from our kind.

"Look I understand what you are feeling right now but you need to understand that we can't lose our mind at this time. You are exhausting yourself and at the same time, you are exhausting me too. Listen to me! I miss Aderyn too! Hell! I want to die right now but that's not the solution. She would have been so angry seeing our condition. Try to understand. If we want her safe we must control our emotions. So, calm down! Running and exhausting yourself won't help the situation. We need energy. We need it for our love, mate Aderyn" I tried to make him understand.

"It all happened because of me! I am weak!" he growled with his ears down.

"Stop blaming yourself!" I argued.

"Shut up! You won't understand human!" he growled in annoyance.

"Don't talk to me like that Black! You are testing my limits now!" I charged at him.

"Me? Actually, it was you. Everything happened because of you!" he stopped in the middle of the woods barring his teeth and bobbing his head.

"What did you just say? How dare you to talk to me like that Black? Are you forgetting your position?" I retorted back.

"Oh shut up! If you weren't so weak as a human then my mate would have been here! She was taken right before your eyes. What did you do? Nothing!" his remark angered me.

"My eyes are your eyes too! You are within me! What could you do? Nothing! And what did you mean by 'my mate'? She is our mate!" I growled at him when he barred his teeth hunching his back at me.

"Fine! I lost to this conversation. I am sorry!" he sat on the ground and put his head down on the grassy ground.

I sighed inwardly. “Why am I even fighting with him?” I thought and heard Black whined and closed his eyes.

“I am sorry too! Black try to understand! We will find her. Have faith in me. On us” I said but he didn’t reply.

“Black?”

“Black?”

“BLACK!”

“What?” he growled in annoyance.

“When did you start to talk so much? I want that old quite Dylan back. You are giving me a headache!” he complained.

“Umm does wolves have headaches too?” I questioned even more to annoy him.

“I understood it today!” he said all of a sudden.

“What?” I questioned confused by his sudden statement.

“Why they used to say that ‘mate changes you’ you have changed! You show emotions a lot now after Aderyn has come into our life. But most annoyingly you talk too much now!” he complained.

“What? Oh well, it is good right?” I questioned amused by him.

“Oh Please! I beg you! Please shut up!” he cried as he got on his four legs and walked towards the house.

“Hey Black!” I continued to annoy him while he walked back towards the house.

“What now?” he asked irritated.

“Do you trust me?” I asked. I knew I was asking absurd questions but it was my only tactics. He would completely destroy himself thinking about Aderyn if I didn’t divert his mind somewhere else.

“What type of question is this? How did your brain get infected so badly? Is this how you human turn up when you are in love?” he questioned.

“Nope! Answer my question! Don’t try to change the subject! Do you trust me or not?” I questioned while he rolled his eyes on me.

“No!” he said and sprinted back towards the house.

I stood there in the middle while the witches surrounded me and stood few feets away from me as the chanted their mantras. They made me stand in the middle of a ritual circle to provide me energy and protection. They told me that lately after Aderyn has been taken I have not been in control of my own body. As my wolf remains anxious all the time he takes over my body whenever he wants. The human side of me seems weak for which the witches are going to perform magic over my body which would give strength to my human side so that I could have Black in control. He knows about all this and he isn't even protesting against all this because he himself knows what destruction he can cause when he has the control over my body.

The witches came out with this to find Aderyn. They told me that after giving energy to my body, they will use the mate bond to find Aderyn. If I had the strength and energy, my mate bond will grow stronger for which they will use their magic to locate Aderyn. They said that they went through their ancestor's book of magic to find out about this and this was the first time ever they were going to do this. I stood shirtless in the middle of the circle of candles, with my eyes closed as I waited patiently for them to perform their magic. It was little disturbing to my sensitive ears because each one of them was chanting their own different mantras loudly. And then, it began when I opened my eyes.

"I, Cynthia Ryle shall guide you to begin your magic. We shall perform one by one with each of chanting our names twelve times to process the magic" she said and the other witches raised their hands towards me and closed their eyes. A halogen light formed on their hands and I watched them all performing the magic on me.

"I, Pearsyvia Wings shall give you the power to boost your senses," she said and a wave of light hit me hard on my face which made me scream in pain as I threw my head back and screamed out as I felt my eyes watering and my claws digging out of my skin painfully. Then I felt something wrapping around both of my hands and I hard to look to see what it was to find out what looked like the roots of a tree penetrating from the ground and circling around my hands as if to hold me in the place. It was so tight and whenever I moved it tightens its hold on me.

"I, Cyreanna Nox shall give you my power to see a vision of the moments that will happen just after five minutes" ray of light penetrated through me and I knelt down due to the pain I felt. My body heated up and my canine teeth barring out of my mouth. I felt blood on my cheeks as my eyes glowed up with a red light and I could no longer see anything. I was blind. The roots tightened even further on my hands holding me in place.

"I, Estelle Helliot shall give you the power to move as fast as the wind and vanish into thin air."

"I, Amber Sueffer and my twin" she stopped and her twin sister spoke "Venus Sueffer" and then they both chanted in unison "shall give you the power to control your abilities."

“I, Phoenix Hunter is privileged to give you the power to control the element of fire,” she said and even though I already had the power to control the element beforehand I felt the enormous amount of energy building up inside me when the light hit my body. I was pleased when she showed up saying that she will join the war and help me against her daughter. She had proved her loyalty two times and I was pleased as well as saddened that she had to stand once again against her daughter.

“I, Hilda Razor shall give you the power to our King, Black Bishop to have the power to build up a shield for the war companions against the enemies.”

“I, Medusa Vex and my sister” she paused for her sister “I, Clarissa Vex” then both of them continued in unison “shall give you the power to use your werewolf claws against silver to protect your companions against your enemies.”

“I, Annika Laire shall give you the energy to withstand pain and loss in the war.”

“I, Cynthia Nox shall give you the energy to fight against the evil and search for your mate in the war.” with that rays after rays of light hit me on my body. I felt my muscles flexing, and my body shapeshifting. Black was taking over my body but I didn’t allow it because the human side of me was stronger than him now. Both of us fought with each other to take over the body. Black fur popped out of my skin all over my body, my canine teeth barred out even further elongating more than its original size, claws tore my skin apart before digging out forcibly elongated more than its original side. The power in my body was enormous. I had never so alive beforehand. My jeans tore apart as the muscles in my thigh flexed further. My power increased so much that I even tore the roots that were holding me in my place apart.

I opened my eyes slowly when everything was over. My vision was incredible. It looked as if I was standing much taller to everyone as if my height increased. I could even see a needle like a dent or hole in the world. My vision had incredibly increased. As I panted and huffed out air because of the power and the force my body has to go through during the rites, I looked down to be amazed by my body.

I was half human and half werewolf now. I looked like a Lycan possibly, I was a Lycan now. I had wolves hind legs and I stood on two legs with a wolf and half human like hand with sharp razor-like elongated claws. My hearing senses had increased. I felt my ears twitching in all distance and I could hear heart beats inside the room. It should be twelve including mine so why was I hearing thirteenth one?

I looked over and followed the sound and my eyes fell on a frog in the corner of the room just at the side of the door.

“Black?” I called my wolf in my mind.

“Yes, I am over here!” he replied.

“Feel the energy?” I asked overwhelmed by the power.

“Love the energy!” he replied in enthusiastic.

“What are we waiting for? Let's get our mate back! Shall we?” I asked and he howled in response. I flexed my body and throwing my head backward I howled like a wolf, our voice penetrating past the walls of the room. The pitch was so high that I bet that even a mere insect miles away from my kingdom could hear my howl.

It was time for the war.

*****

Chapter 57

From here onwards it's my Pov. I will change this at the time of editing the story.

"I see something" everyone's breath hitched when out of nowhere Cyreana enters the room where Dylan and everyone were training. Dylan was testing his new powers with the other witches. The elemental powers that he had and that he got seems to have tremendous energy one could ever imagine. Even in his human form, he defeated his own werewolves warriors, even his beta Blake and two of the witches that are the twin sisters Amber and Venus Sueffer.

"I can see Edna!" Cyreana spoke in an undertone but she forgot that the people before were her not some normal human but werewolves and witches. The werewolves easily heard what she just said and all of a sudden loud throaty growls of wolves was heard as the anger hearing the name of their enemy resurfaced the pain and loss of their family members and even their Queen.

Dylan though looked as if he was ready to kill maintained his calm and closed his eyes with his hands forming a tight fist as if he was trying to control all his emotions. Surely though, it was hard for Dylan out of all the wolves to maintain such a demeanor after losing his love of his life out of his sight. He wanted nothing but to rip the throat of the enemy who had the audacity to even touch his mate.

"What do you see?" asked Dylan in a taut voice from which one could easily tell that he was anything but calm.

Cyreana closed her eyes as she raised her hands up in the air and concentrated on her vision.

"Some strange animals. Yes! animals. No! wait! It's not animals. Is it human? Oh my lord! They look horrible! I can't tell you what they are but I see Edna. She is sitting in the middle of a magic ring circle chanting something. The animals or should I say beast are circling her up as if they are guarding her. Wait! the beast is growing?" Cyreana said and jerked up from her position as she crunched down because of the energy she put on to see that vision.

"Cyreana! Are you alright?" Amber walked to her and held her by her arms inspecting her face.

"You alright?" Dylan asked worriedly.

"Ya! Yes my lord! I'm fine" Cyreana looked at Amber and smiled gently t her before reassuring her that she was alright. She then gently pushing past her walked to the window transom window and she pulled the pushed the glass narrow door of the window open letting in the fresh air and light. People who stood there and looked at her actions thought that maybe she needed air and energy

after the incident that happened a few seconds ago but little did they know what was particularly going on. Cyreana was actually waiting for her Raven to come to her.

Dylan seemed to be getting impatient as Cyreana stood near the window doing nothing. It was the matter of his mate and kingdom, he couldn't just pretend not to be patient when everything was so out of place before his eyes. As he opened his mouth ready to ask what Cyreana was doing, he chose to shut his mouth when he saw a strange looking raven with red eyes flying up to Cyreana and it sat on Cyreana forearm. The Raven lifted its wings in the air and fluttered it making a short, repeated shrill calls as if it was talking to Cyreana. Even though it looked weird, the people present in the room watched silently paying attention to the scenario that was going on before them.

Cyreana lifted her other arm and chanted something and people watched as the Raven literally owed to her before disappearing into her forearm forming a small tattoo on her wrist.

"Cyreana?" Venus spoke for the first time. Venus was closest than any other witches to Cyreana. She knew her and she knew her Raven too but she knew that Cyreana never uses her Raven as it consumes lots of her energy making her weak. So, guessing from what just happened Cyreana used the Raven for the first time after decades in order to do something. Now, Venus was eager to know what Cyreana has got.

"My Queen has been found" Cyreana turned around and said with a smirk on her face. Her eyes were glowing victoriously as if she achieved the biggest success in her life and which she surely did.

"I found where our luna is!" she said almost in a tremulous voice showing how excited she was.

Venus and Amber blinked their eyes at her and as if it processed what just happened both of them turned to look at Dylan. All of a sudden, an uncertain silence fell in the room. Everybody stood shocked by the sudden news. They were probably waiting for their king to show any emotions and command them what to do. On the other hand, Black stood up and for the first time wiggled its tail happily after a long time. It was now Dylan's turn. As everybody waited for his commands, he closed his eyes and smirked.

"Let's go then!" as soon as the words came out of his mouth the room boomed with people cheering and howling ready for the war. They looked enthusiastic for the war. It was just not for the matter to win or loss but now it was for revenge. Finally, they will be getting that revenge which they had buried inside their heart after their king and queen were killed. Not only that, but they lost their near and dear ones recently. They were innocent, and they didn't deserve death. To the top of that, the 'Bitch Witch' as they call her has the audacity to come back in their life and abduct their new Queen before them. They wanted blood. Not just anyone's but Edna's blood and they were hellbound to put that witch to death even if it cost their lives. That witch needs to die. They will make sure of it.

Aderyn watched as the wicked witch performed type of magic upon those beasts. She noticed as the beasts visibly grew double of their size looking even more intimidating and powerful. The bloody smell made Aderyn nauseous all of a sudden. The more they grew the more the bloody smell erupted from their body and mouth. Aderyn's nose cringed up as one of the beasts lowered its head and sniffed Aderyn's face. Saliva mixed with blood fell out of that beast's mouth on Aderyn's face and she shrieked in disgust wanting nothing but to get away from those stinky animals.

"Get away from her!" roared Edna's voice. The beast growled and made a low rumbling sound before stepping back from Aderyn's tied form. Aderyn couldn't be more grateful that the beast was away from her face. If it stood, even more, closer to her, then she was sure that she would definitely throw up on herself as she was held tied down. Now, she was feeling weak. Her captivators didn't even feed her from the day she had been captured by them and this fact annoyed and irritated her even more. All she wanted was something sharp for her to get her out of that stupid rope. She was an assassin for god's sake. There was no rope made in this world which could tie her down. But the fact that, she was constantly surrounded and guarded by those beasts made her watch her moves. The last thing she wished was the beast to eat her alive.

So, patiently she waited. She knew that Dylan wouldn't let Edna keep her away from him very long. She had her faith in him and only the almighty's knew what she was feeling being tied down and surrounded by beasts who stank like deceased and decaying body. Though, she had no idea what was going on Dylan's mind because the witch before her had somehow detached the mind link between him and Dylan still she could feel something. Some type of emotions assuring her that something big was coming her way. Something was going to happen. And judging from her pounding heartbeat and strange shivers she assumed it was Dylan. He must be already out in search of her. Now all she wanted was to see his face and closer to him. She wanted to confess something to both Dylan and Black. In all this period of time, she has come to the point that she no longer can stay away from them. Both of them play a vital role in her life and she has realized her feelings and emotions for them which is yet to confessed by her to them.

She must do it, because of the deserves to know about her feeling. And she made up her mind that she will not die until she confesses her feeling. Her eyes rolled back and a sigh escaped her mouth as she felt her body aching because of the uncomfortable position. She tried to twitch her body feeling her sore back muscle.

"Is it not a comfortable position for you?" the wicked witch singsong and Aderyn rolled her eyes muttering colorful words under her breath.

"Should I bring you a king sized bed and soft pillows for your aid, your highness?"Edna walked over to Aderyn's tied down self and placed her head next to Aderyn's staring into her eyes. Aderyn couldn't help but look at her bloody wounded face.

“Don’t look at it!” bellowed Edna’s voice as she got up and slapped hard on Aderyn’s face.

Aderyn hissed in pain and closed her eyes not because of pain but the anger she felt.The previous Aderyn who had no emotions killed people and slaughtered life mercilessly began to surface on Aderyn’s face. Edna took a step back when she saw the look on Aderyn’s face. A strange coloured light emerged out of her body as a small tattoo like circular mark appeared on Aderyn’s forehead and her eyes changed into dark black as she looked monstrous scaring Edna.

“What is this?” Edna thought as she looked at Aderyn’s inhumane form. Undoubtedly, Aderyn looked vicious and the fact that she didn’t even realize it made Edna wonder what was going on. This was a new sight before her. Never had she ever saw a human looking like this or was it...

Edna looked at the mark on Aderyn’s look and then she realized that Aderyn had already been marked by the king and judging from the tattoo like mark on her forehead she has already been accepted by the werewolf kingdom. That only means, Aderyn is no longer a simple normal human. Though not mated, Aderyn has got some beastly powers from her mate which differentiates her from another human. But as she is a human, the powers are of no match if she were a werewolf. Her power would have increased the double of now if she was a werewolf. It would have been hard for Edna to keep Aderyn in place or keep her captivated for a long time.

“I see” Edna muttered to herself all of a sudden understanding that anger triggers the power within Aderyn and she must learn to control it before the beastly power controls her body. But Aderyn’s power was enough to rip the throat of Edna if she wasn’t cautious around her. She made sure not to make Aderyn angry further because she knew Aderyn had no idea about the power nor did she knew how to use it. Triggering her anger would only cause Edna’s own downfall.

“Now, Now look what time it is!” Edna sang trying to change the topic.

As soon as she said that she noticed as Aderyn’s eye changed back to its normal colour and size and she blinked several times at her to adjust her eyes to the light.

“Time to celebrate!” Edna sang and with her magic brought out a flute and a bottle of wine. She gestured the flute to Aderyn but Aderyn huffed and looked the other side declining her offer. Edna shrugged her shoulder and poured an amount into the flute before she raised her flute in the air for toasting by herself “Cheers for my victory!” she sang wickedly with that wicked evil glow in that chatoyance like eyes of hers.

Edna took the flute to her mouth and gulped down the red wine which was actually the blood of some creature that she claimed gave enormous power to her. She danced happily and jumped and hopped on one foot over those candles triumphantly. Aderyn wondered what made her so happy all of a sudden that she was hopping and dancing making merry. Little did Aderyn knew that a cruel and vicious idea of Edna wanting to kill Aderyn before the sunrise had formed in her head.

Seeing those powers, Edna had set her mind that now she would no longer wait to kill Dylan when she can destroy him by killing his mate and gaining her powers making herself, even more, stronger and she had planned it to do before the sunrise. Edna was so happy and busy in merry making that she didn't even sense it coming.

Few miles away, the wild wolves ran across the meadows and streams of the river.The other wild animals watched and some even hide frightened to see not one but thousands of carnivores wolves running like a gust of the wind towards a direction. What looked like a black wolf but not exactly a wolf was leading the massive pack as they sprinted into the woods and vanished away in the dense mass of trees. Little did Edna know that her end was coming because the king himself was leading his pack to conquer the parts of the forest to reach his beloved.

*****

Chapter 58

Silence marred the place, not even a single whisper was heard. It was as if a pin fell on the ground then, it could be heard and the most amazing part was on that the vast meadow, there were thousands of werewolves standing and looking at the direction where they had assumed their enemy would attack from. Thousands of wolves yet not a single sound. Everyone contacted each other using the mind link and waited desperately for their enemies to show up.

They didn't need any permission, nor any invitation or warning to their enemy informing them that they were here. They knew that their enemies are smart enough and they would have already had the idea that they were here to get their Queen back. A werewolf raised his head and twitches its ears in all direction and pretty soon sniffed the air. Dylan in his transformed Lycan form stood on his hind legs and sniffed the air, as soon as he did that, he smelled blood and he knew that they were here. The wolf raised it's head and howled. It's rest rumbled due to the long howl and he informed his pack that they were.

The wolves sat on an attack position crouching on the ground and continuously sniffed the air locating their spots. The first wolf in the front jumped on the air but like a gust of wind it disappeared. The other wolves looked in shock but then few yards away saw the same wolf's body being thrown and colliding to a tree, where it fell on the ground whimpering and blood all over its mouth.

They were here.

Dylan and Black's body shook in anger as they witnessed the other wolves being attacked as well. Black being an aggressive creature wanted to kill them all but Dylan controlled his emotions and asked him to concentrate on the power they got from the witches to fight their enemies. Black obliged and they closed their eyes and concentrated, the only thing they saw was a creature, a different looking creature which resembled humans but they looked dead and they were just stink badly. They used the power to see the future and opened their eyes. They waited for three minutes and then jumped on the air and punched on their front direction and pretty soon, they saw the animal on the ground whimpering and screaming in pain. It's body shook like a dying lizard and it held its ripped off face as it shrieked annoyingly on the ground.

"Kill it before it gets up!" Black said and Dylan nodded in response.

Dylan used his hinds legs to jump and he landed directly on the whimpering beast on the ground. Dylan and Black's body weight crushed the beast's skull and the beast lay dead on the ground not even twitching a single finger.

Dylan looked the other way to find his pack being attacked mercilessly. Far away he saw a wolf fighting and clawing the beast and Dylan smiled in triumph when he witnessed the beast falling down on the ground dead, because the wolf ripped its neck off using it's canine teeth. The wolf looked up towards Dylan wiggling it's tail and Dylan nodded but then Dylan watched as the perfectly fine wolf collapsed on the ground without any reason. Dylan reached him in no minute, using his supernatural strength and looked at wolf who was now whimpering in pain and it's eyes colour were changing to a black one.

"Estelle!" Black called the witch and no minutes, the witch appeared before them and cast a shield over them which prevented their enemies to attack them.

"What going on?" Dylan asked pointing at the wolf who was breathing heavily struggling with it's life.

Estelle crouched down next to the wolf's body and lifted it's head up on her lap. She checked it's mouth and using her finger, took something out which looked like blood. She rubbed the thick stinky blood in between her finger and then smelled it closely.

"Poison" she whispered as soon as it struck her mind.

Dylan and Black heard it and they growled in agony.

"Edna has played it smart. She had this beast's body filled up with poisoned blood. She knew that the wolves would use their mouth and as soon as the blood goes into their mouth. It's posion's them" Estelle said and gasped when the wolf closed it's eyes and lied dead on her lap. A lone tear escaped her eyes as she patted the dead wolf's head and carefully placed it's head on the ground.

Black heart's clenched in pain seeing their friend's body lying dead on the ground. They knew who the wolf was and both Dylan and Black made it up in their mind that they wouldn't let it's sacrifice go in vain. They would seek revenge and a loud growl erupted their chest as they rip the shield from the inside and attacked their enemies making sure not to touch their blood using their mouth. The claws were enough for them to rip their enemies body in two and one by one both of them piled up their enemies body on the ground in anger.

Estelle made sure to inform about the poison to all the other wolves and the other witches and soon the other wolves using their sharp claws and body weight to crush their enemies but it wasn't enough. Because they were only hurting their enemies, but couldn't kill them only by using their claws. Estelle and the other witches looked at this and discussed what to do. After discussing and going through some of their ancestor's book's they got the idea.

Together they performed a spell and casted it all over their wolves and the wolves watched themselves floating up on the air by a green coloured light and then collapsing badly on the

ground. No understanding what just happened, the wolves shook their head and then they knew what happened. Their canine teeth were elongated and they were changed into a silver one. They roamed their tongue in their mouth only to find no tongue, but only silver coated teeth. Even though silver was danger for a werewolf but still, they felt no pain with the elongated silver canine on their mouth. The wolves looked up at the floating witches and the witches raised their hands in the air signaling them to go.

They all nodded and jumped ready to kill their enemies. Their sharp elongated teeth ripped off their enemies neck and in no time they succeeded in killing major of their enemies.

It all carried on, wolves killed the beasts, some of the beasts killed the wolves and Dylan fought and ripped off the beasts vigorously.

“Locate Aderyn!” Black informed the witches and the witches obliged using their power to locate their Queen.

“Towards the North!” Estelle informed Black and as soon as he heard that he ran towards the direction, destroying and shattering the beasts into pieces whenever they came in his way. Dylan ran into the North direction in his four legs and used his one hand to destroy his enemies.

Pretty soon, he found an isolated castle like structure and he ran even more quickly for his Aderyn.

“Go! Go! Go! rip every wolf out their and attack their King! Make sure you hurt their king!” Aderyn watched as Edna made up more beasts and ordered them to kill Dylan. Her heart clenched even thinking that they were going to hurt Dylan. The only thing that she prayed was to have Dylan safe.

She looked at Edna who moved her lips and then a light formed in front of her face. Edna opened her eyes and looked at the light. The light forming like a monitor showing her what was going on in the battle field. She cursed under her breath when she saw that they had somehow found about the poison and now they were using Silver coated elongated canine to kill her beasts. Then her eyes fell on the witches. There they were, floating in the sky helping the wolves and healing some of them as quickly as they could.

Her eyes recognized her previous mates and when her eyes fell on a witch it teared up.

Aderyn watched as the wicked witch moved her hand and tried to touch the face of Phoenix Hunter who was supposed to be her mom. The lady whom she was born to and she called mom until one day everything destroyed and she blamed everything for that Dylan. Because of him, her mother whom she loved so much in the world raised her hand to perform magic in order to kill her.

She still remembers the day when the witches circled her and threw her on a magic circle and they began to perform and chant magic to kill her. Out of all the witches she called for her mom and hoped that she would save her own daughter from the other witches but to her shock her mother walked up to her and stood in front of the circle and raised her hand helping the other witches. Edna didn't even see love or any emotions in her mother's eyes. Phoenix didn't even cry when she performed the magic knowing it very well that was going to kill her own daughter.

"You lowered my head in shame," is what Edna heard from mother when she closed her eyes when they all performed the magic and killed her.

The words cut through her heart like a sharp knife. Edna closed her eyes and let her tears spill as she remembered the day. Her own mother has thought of her as a disgrace and had wanted to kill her. Thanks to the back up that Edna had spelled before attacking the kingdom. She had made sure to use a back up spell for which she didn't die. All that happened that day was, she found herself travelling across the time. Yes, her body got teleported to a different time zone and it took her years to come back to the current time zone. But something good happened with her when she teleported. She found herself in her ancestor's time and presented herself before them telling them that she mastered travelling in time and she is their generation. The happy ancestor's believed her and taught her some magic spells which she never knew and helped her getting back into her time. Only if they knew that would be a reason for their kind's disgrace.

Now she was strong and powerful. She cared no longer about anyone nor about her mother. But what can she do? Phoenix was her mother and is her mother after all. She couldn't fight with the feelings.

Edna looked as a beast approached the witches from the back and jumped up in the air aiming at Phoenix wanting to kill her. As soon as the other witches saw that they jumped in alarm and tried to warn Phoenix who didn't have any idea about the beast sneaking up from behind her.

Blood fell on the ground and Aderyn watched in wide eyes out of shock not believing what had happened.

Edna had raised her hand and snapped her fingers, this made a nearby beast to jump before Phoenix to save her and in the action both of the beast lay dead on the ground. When the witches couldn't understand what just happened. Phoenix had a knowing look as if she knew what just happened. Edna had saved her mother. Even though her mother wanted and helped the other witches to kill her, still she knelt down because of the love she has for her mother. She couldn't see her mother getting killed by a beast which she made. Yes, she wanted to destroy and kill everyone but not her mother.

Edna wiped the light screen off and looked back at Aderyn.

“It's time for you to say goodbye to this world” she whispered and took menacing steps towards Aderyn.

Aderyn clutched the rope and tried to pull it when she saw the wicked witch nearing her. She couldn’t believe that it was her end. Aderyn had never feared her death but now she wasn’t afraid but she had a wish in her heart and that was to see Dylan for the last time. If she was going to die then it would be on Dylan’s lap not like being tied up and killed by a stupid teenager witch.

She watched as the witch came closer to her and took out a dagger and then she circled it around her and then raised it above her chest ready to pierce it through her body. Aderyn didn’t scream cause she wasn’t a coward and she has promised to herself that she whenever she dies she would die like soldier not like some whimpering insect. She closed her eyes and waited for her life to be taken away from her and Edna moved to forcefully stab Aderyn only to be forcibly thrown to a distance and collapsing against the wall.

Aderyn heard some commotions and she opened her eyes to find a black wolf standing on its hind legs panting and grasping for air and looking towards the direction where it threw Edna.

The wolf looked back at Aderyn and using it’s claws ripped the rope around Aderyn into pieces. Aderyn jumped off the table and looked at the wolf. She looked at its eyes and the familiar eyes indicated her that it was someone she wished to see.

“Dylan” she smiled at the wolf thrice the bigger than her size. In response whimpered and wiggled its tail.

“And Black too!” Aderyn laughed knowing the cause of the whimper.

“You mutt!” they heard Edna as she stood up and cursed Dylan before chanting some spell and a ball of fire erupted from nowhere and it came flying towards them. Dylan put Aderyn behind her and stop the fire using his own. He swung his arm and a ball of fire erupted and it collided against Edna’s fire and it disappeared into thin air.

Edna spell something and she flew up in the air and she went past the wall trying to escape. Dylan looked back at Aderyn and the jumped into action by running towards the same wall and shattering the wall for going outside. He jumped down and Aderyn ran up to the shattered wall and looked down to find Dylan landing on the ground effortlessly and running towards the direction where Edna went.

She couldn’t just stay there and wait for them. She climbed down the wall and as soon as her feet touched the ground she ran towards the direction where they went hoping for Dylan’s safety. She ran o her feet and saw the wolves fighting against the beasts. It was a chaos. Several bodies of the

wolves and the beast lay down on the ground dead and the scenery gave nothing but pain to her heart. It pained her to know that the wolves died trying to save her.

As she was running, a large wolf ran past her and ripped a beast apart who was going to attack Aderyn. She recognised the wolf as Blake and she looked as the other wolves ran to her side surrounding her and saving her from the attacks of the beasts. She couldn't be more thankful to them. The witches float to her and asked her come join them so that they could protect her but she denied them letting them know that she was running to save Dylan.

Aderyn accompanied with the wolves and witches ran towards the direction where Dylan had went and finally after running for some minutes, she reached the spot. It was the spot on a cliff where Dylan and Edna were fighting. Dylan looked alright while Edna had cuts all over her body and she was bleeding badly.

"I will kill you today!" came Edna's bellowed voice as she took out the same dagger which she was going to use to kill Aderyn beforehand and swung it on Dylan's direction. The dagger stab Dylan's arm and Dylan fell on the ground screaming in pain. It turns out the dagger was made specially by Edna to kill supernatural beings.

"Dylan!" Aderyn screamed in agony. She watched as Blake jumped up in action and ran towards Edna to save Dylan. Two of the wolves joined him and two of the wolves stayed behind to protect Aderyn.

Before Aderyn could run off to Dylan, Cyreanna cast a spell and formed a spell over them stopping Aderyn to went past the shield.

"What are you doing? Let me go!" Aderyn screamed and yelled at the witches.

"We are trying to protect you my lady" Amber said out of guilt and looked towards the direction where Dylan was still on the floor while Blake and the other two wolves tried to bite Edna's neck but were failing.

"The dagger!" everyone looked at Phoenix's direction. She had spoke for the first time in the battle and her eyes were trained on her daughter's face and the dagger that she was using.

"What about the dagger?" Pearsyvia asked.

"The dagger reminds me of our ancestor's sword which was used to hunt down the beasts, vampires and even rogue wolves" Phoenix said and the witches looked closely at the dagger.

"Could it be?" Cyreanna said.

"What's going on?" Aderyn asked confused thinking what they were talking about.

“My lady, our ancestors were very much powerful than us and were very intelligent. Unlike us, as we became hybrid because some of our ancestor’s married to human which made us lose some of our powers. So, in the past when they were the real witches, they made that sword in order to serve the kingdom and slaughter evil. And it was said that once, the sword kills a beast the beast could no longer survive or any back up spell will no longer work on it. It looks likes Edna has somehow travelled to the past and has succeeded in stealing a part of the sword and she has made a dagger in order to kill our King” Phoenix said and Aderyn felt as her heart pounded against her chest when she heard that.

“But-” Phoenix started and stopped when she closed her eyes thinking something.

“But what?” Venus asked and everyone waited for her to speak.

“But the sword can be used to bring back the lives of the innocent who died saving or fighting for their people. In other sense, we need that dagger to kill Edna and to bring the lives of the wolves whom we lost before Edna accomplished her mission in killing our Lord” Phoenix said.

“How to bring that dagger?” Amber asked.

Phoenix thought for a while and then looked towards Aderyn and then she said something which shocked everyone.

“Will you sacrifice your life for saving our King and our kind?” Phoenix asked Aderyn. Gasps were heard as the witches couldn’t believe what Phoenix has just said. The wolves growled at Phoenix for even saying those words to Aderyn.

“Phoenix!” Estelle snapped at Phoenix.

“Have you lost your mind?” Cyreanna glared at Phoenix and spoke through gritted teeth.

“How could you eve-” Aderyn cut Amber in the middle saying “Yes, that would be a honor for me because I succeeded in saving my love and even the people who love me” Aderyn’s statement shocked everyone.

“What are you saying?” Pearsyvia put her hand on her forehead.

“Very well then! Prove it to us and go save your mate!” Phoenix threw something on Aderyn and before anyone could stop the thing, Aderyn caught it and Phoenix unshield her and they watched as Aderyn dashed towards Edna.

“You fool! What have you done?” snapped Amber at Phoenix and the other witches ran after Aderyn trying to save her from getting killed.

“Wait my Queen! Please don’t go there!” Venus yelled after Aderyn as she ran to stop her.

“What have you done?” Amber whispered with wide eyed as she looked back a crying Phoenix.

“I will miss her” Phoenix cried and they watched as Aderyn jumped on Dylan’s body who tried to stop her by holding her ankle but he failed because she was too fast and Aderyn jumped over Blake’s wolf form and attacked Edna in such a force that both of them fell of the cliff. Aderyn had managed to get hold of Edna as she made sure to have a tight grip and she jumped off the cliff with Edna struggling to get her hands free.

Everyone looked in shock and Dylan transformed into his human form and he looked towards where Aderyn just jumped off.

“Aderyn!” screamed Dylan in agony as he just witnessed his mate’s sacrifice.

*****

Chapter 59

Tears shredded down everyone's face and some stood there with a look of disbelief looking the way where their supposed to be Queen just jumped off the cliff. Dylan sat on his knees looking at the way where the love of his life just jumped off before his own eyes and she couldn't do anything to save her. He was shocked and Black within him didn't even blink his eyes. A long gash formed in his right arm where Edna had stabbed her using that dagger and blood was continuously oozing out of it. His supernatural power couldn't heal it because he was stabbed by a dagger with was made from a magical holy sword.

Amber put her hands on her eyes feeling terrible at the same time she too crouched down on the ground feeling guilty that she couldn't do anything. Venus walked up to her sister who was crying her eyes out and hugged her putting her head on her shoulder not able to hold the tears anymore. Amber cried and wept and held onto her sister Venus for support.

Pearsyvia, Estelle, and the other witches were still in shock. They didn't even move from their place because they just couldn't believe what just happened. Cyreanna glared at Phoenix and marched up to her in anger. A noise was heard and the wolves looked up towards the source to find Cyreanna had raised her hand to hit Phoenix on her face.

Phoenix took the hit and stood there with blank eyes, void of any emotions. She had a distant expression and tears threatened to fall from her eyes as she stood there lowering her head while Cyreanna hit her one more time on her face.

"You traitor!" screamed Cyreanna who slapped Phoenix once again for the third time in anger.

"Stop it! Cyreanna!" Hilda one of the witches held Cyreanna from her arms and tried to pull her off from hitting Phoenix once again.

"Stop it!" cried Hilda who put her head on Cyreanna's shoulder to hide her tears.

Cyreanna on the other sobbed and screamed at Phoenix for being a traitor and allowing all this that happened.

Blake, on the other hand, shifted back into his human form and walked off to Dylan and kept a hand on his shoulder not understanding what to do. The wolves shifted back into their human forms and one of the wolves howled raising its head into the air, letting the other knows about their position before it shifted back into the human form.

"All this time she was with her! Oh my goodness!" screamed Cyreanna not being able to hold her emotions to herself.

“Oh my god! This is the reason why I had that vision where I didn’t see our Queen in the fut-” she fell on her knees and hit the ground hard blaming herself for not seeing it coming.

“My Lord,” Blake tried to call Dylan who sat there with distant eyes facing towards the direction where Aderyn just jumped off.

“Dylan?” Blake called him using his name wanting to let him know that his friend was there for him.

One of the beasts crushed the head of a wolf and was just going to drink blood from its neck when another wolf jumped over it and ripped it into pieces. The Wolf then looked back towards its dead friend and lowered its head showing respect for the sacrifice that it made.

All the wolves heard the howl and they increased their pace to kill to kill each and every beast as fast as they could. Minutes later when all the beasts were dead, satisfied they ran off towards the cliff where they heard the howl only to find a chaos situation. They didn’t get what was going on. There was their King on the ground while Blake, their beta was next to him. The witches were crying and the werewolves stood there in grief looking at their King.

One of the wolves shifted back into his human form and walked off to the grief-stricken werewolf.

“What happened?” he asked to him.

“Where is the Queen?” he asked when the grief-stricken werewolf raised his head and shook his head no with teary eyes.

Disbelieved, he took two to three step backward in shock and looked at the direction of the wolves who heard it all.

Dylan sat their few seconds and got up. He had made up his mind. He and his wolf decided it together that they must follow their mate and they were going to do that. Nobody had any clue what he was thinking when he wiped off his unshed tears and took in a deep breath. It was a life changing decision. He was feeling suffocated now and he looked back towards his people who were standing mourning the death of their Queen. It was all over for him now because once again his life was ripped away from him and he couldn’t do anything.

He looked at the gash on his hand. It was still bleeding, his powers failed to heal the wound and he could even see the inner part of his muscle as Edna had made sure to stab deeper into his flesh. He knew that even if the wound healed it would leave a scar behind it and Dylan didn’t really care about it anymore. He looked up at Blake who had no idea what he was thinking. Blake thought Dylan must be emotionally breaking down and that was the reason why he wasn’t speaking. He completely understood the situation but on the other hand, Dylan had something else going inside his mind.

He thought after him Blake would be the King and unlike him, he would serve his Kingdom well and fine. People will mourn for his and Aderyn's death but as time heals every pain, they will forget and move on with their new king in their life. Dylan raised his hand and kept it on Blake's shoulder. Blake touched his best friend's arm trying to assure him. Dylan was just going to announce him as the king when he smelled something.

His nostrils flared up smelling that familiar fragrance and he stood there in shock not believing his senses. The wolves sniffed the air and some wagged their tail as if they recognized the smell. The witches looked at the wolves who were whining wolves with confusion while Cyreanna stood up on her feet and wiped her tears off with her sleeves and looked at each and every wolf who were now wagging their tail and whining.

"I am not a traitor!" Cyreanna heard Phoenix and when she looked at her she was wiping off her own unshredded tears using a napkin and she smirked looking at the direction. Following her gaze, Cyreanna and the other witches turned towards where Dylan was still standing in shock. Even Blake could smell the familiar chocolate and rose fragrance which was coming from the direction where Aderyn just jumped off. Finally, Dylan blinked and looked towards the way. Previously, he didn't have guts to walk and look down where he knew he would only see two bodies and he didn't have enough strength to do. But as the smell grew stronger and stronger he mustered up courage and slowly walked towards the edge and when he looked down he couldn't believe what his saw.

His wolf jumped, whined, wagged its tail and howled in joy when it saw what was going on from Dylan's eyes. There she was, live and healthy as she climbed up the cliffed with little difficulty. On a second, she looked up and her eyes met Dylan's which immediately shook Dylan to his core.

"Well about time you thought to help me climb up!" came Aderyn's sarcastic statement as she glared up at Dylan who just stood there in shock still not believing his eyes.

"Are you even going to help or should I pull you down you moron!" yelled Aderyn and that jerked him out of his shock state and he moved here and there thinking what to do.

Without warning, he jumped down and held the pieces of rock and made it to Aderyn.

"You could have done it earlier! I have to climb all this way up. What were you even doing?" she looked at Dylan who wrapped one of his arms around her waist while using the other one to hold a branch of a tree.

"Sorry! Sorry!" he whispered and Aderyn looked at him confused seeing his bloodshot eyes and an expression which indicated her as if he would cry any second.

Stuffing the dagger on her mouth she signaled Dylan to take her up which he nodded and only using his one hand, he climbed up with Aderyn grasped tightly in his hold. As soon as he reached

the top, Blake and some other werewolves in their human form offered to help Aderyn and then Dylan up. As soon as Aderyn's foot touched the ground she was lifted up into a bear hug and a whoomph left her mouth which caused the dagger to tumble down on the ground. She was lifted up none other than Dylan who cradled her, sniffed and hugged her as if his life depended on her.

The witches were still in shock.

"What did you do?" asked Cyreanna to Phoenix who just smiled in response.

"I gave her your locket!" she smiled though her eyes looked watery as if she was going to cry.

"What?" Cyreanna looked at her in confusion and quickly searched for her magical locket on her locket. Truly, it was missing. It was not just some random locket because she had put her spell on it that anyone who closes his or her eyes rubs it will be able to teleport to the place which his or her eyesight looks in the first when he or she opens their eyes.

In all that Chaos Phoenix has somehow managed to tell about it to Aderyn through a magic spell mindlink and when she threw something on Aderyn back in that shield, it was none other but the same locket of Cyrenna which she managed to steal it from her neck. She had to do it fast so, without informing anyone about it she let Aderyn control the situation.

Aderyn on the other hand planned to jump off taking Edna with her. They fought while Aderyn snatched the dagger from her and stabbed her on her chest. The witch died and quickly Aderyn used the locket just before hitting the ground remembering Phoenix's words.

"Oh my Lord!" Cyreanna exclaimed putting her hand on her eyes.

"I am so sorry!" Cyreanna exclaimed and looked back at Phoenix who finally burst down to tears.

"I am not a traitor!" she sobbed and the witches ran to her and hugged her tightly.

"I can't believe I lost her once again!" sobbed and wailed a broken Phoenix referring to her daughter as the witches comforted and consoled her for her loss.

"Oh my love!" Dylan looked up at his mate who held his shoulder for support.

Blake picked the dagger up and gave it to the witches.

"The dagger!" exclaimed Hilda with happiness.

Everyone's eyes trained at Dylan and Aderyn who were lost in their own world. Estelle cleared her voice and signaled everyone to leave them alone. They all nodded and Amber said more like excused herself and the others by saying " C'mon let us bring back our friends!" she said showing them the dagger and in uttermost happiness the wolves jumped in joy and wagging their tails ran

towards the way where they had lost their friends. The witches laughed and glanced towards their King and Queen before leaving with a smiling Blake.

“Okay! Easy there wolfie! Now put me down!” Aderyn giggled and Dylan shook his head no.

“Dylan!” Aderyn laughed when he tried to kiss her still holding her up in his arms.

“Please put me down!” she chided and Dylan obliged by slowly putting her down but he didn’t let her go because he pulled her into a hug and kissed the mark on her neck which made her giggle.

“You gave me a heart attack!” complained Dylan who felt more than contended holding his love back in his arms.

“Really?” Aderyn questioned him playfully but Dylan pulled away from her and looked directly into her eyes.

“Don’t ever do that to me again. Please Love!” he said with so many emotions reflecting his eyes that almost immediately Aderyn felt guilty for doing that to him.

“I’m so sorry!” she said and reached up to kiss him on his lips. Soon, it turned into a passionate one and as she pulled away Dylan couldn’t help but smile at her.

“You came back to me” he whispered to her to which she just shrugged her shoulders and wrapped her arms around his neck.

“What can I do? I keep coming back to you!” she said and they laughed remembering the time when Aderyn tried to escape. Everytime she ended up facing him and those memories brought nothing but smile to their faces.

“And I can’t just leave you without tell you this” before Dylan could ask what she closed the gap and kissed him again pulling his head down by his neck.

As she pulled back and planted a kiss on his forehead she completed her previous incomplete sentence “how much I love you!” she completed which made Dylan look at her in shock.

“Yes, I love you more than anything in this world. I love you to the moon and back and beyond the infinity” she said and watched as a tear rolled down her lover’s cheek hearing her confession.

It was not the end but the start of their new life.

****

Chapter 60: Epilogue

Aderyn Pov

The moon shone brightly and the howl of the wolves echoed my ears, as I looked in front of me sadly witnessing the funeral process of the dead wolves. It turned out, the dagger couldn't bring the lives of the wolves who passed away early. Only the wolves who died nearly the time when I got the dagger back were saved. I looked at the side to find, Cole and Jenny standing looking sadly at the deceased wolf's bodies. Blake and Bella were comforting the dead wolf's mates and the wolf who lost their friends howled showing respect and feeling sorrowful for the loss.

Dylan encircled his arms around my waist and pulled me close. A tear escaped my eyes, as I looked at mates of the deceased wolves crying their eyes out. Some of the packs lost their alphas and it was heartbreaking to see the sadness in the whole pack's eyes. Somewhere deep down, I felt guilty.

"I can't help but think that this all happened because of me," I told Dylan and felt his arms tightening around me.

"No, it's not like that. It was meant to happen. The only person to be blamed in this is Edna, this all happened because of her. It's only because today we have lost so many companions. You don't need to blame yourself for anything," he said.

I gasped when I saw the body of a familiar person. The beasts attacked the house and the female warriors among with normal wolves had to fight too. Cole despite being wounded fought in his terrible state managed to fight but lots of female warriors and innocent lives were lost in that fight but among those lives, we lost a precious and nearer one. Lily.

We lost her and I couldn't believe my eyes when I saw her body. Her left hand dangled from the stretcher from which her body was being carried. I walked up to her and held her hand and slowly put it up on her other hand. I couldn't help it any longer because I burst out in tears when I saw her face. Her eyes closed, hair on her side shoulder, her mouth partly apart. Scratches, bruises, and wounds marred her beautiful face. She couldn't even meet her mate. That made my heartbreak even further because here, two people who were supposed to be destined for each other couldn't meet.

I felt Dylan pulling me back my waist as we moved back and stood back watching the deceased one being carried away. The witches stood their quietly as they performed some spell over the deceased bodies and chanted some mantras in their mind for their piece. It was not a sight to behold. Even the pups who lost their parents cried and sobbed crestfallen. The burial process was to be held soon and we all closed our eyes and prayed for the deceased one for redemption.

Five months later

"Aderyn?" I heard Dylan calling me through mind link and I walked to him to the kitchen to find him pouring soup in the bowl.

"What happened?" I asked and walked to him and held his arm and leaned against him and watched as he garnished the soup with parsley leaves.

"Eat up," he said and I hummed in response taking two bowls from him, I walked back towards the drawing hall where I took my seat on the sofa next to pregnant Jenny and handed her one of the bowls.

"Thankyou," she smiled and I watched Cole leaned down and pecked her cheeks before taking a seat next to the Tv.

Jenny was three months pregnant and Dylan told me that Cole told him, Jenny is expecting twins because she could hear two heartbeats from within her. Everyone was sad after that war. The other packs returned to their respective lands and the packs who lost their Alphas has new alphas, some alphas are young, the son of their deceased father while some are the betas who took their alphas position.

Nobody was happy, nor anybody talked for many days about the war. Everyone was missing Lily. But then, their buried place was filled up with flowers and roses, people didn't forget to visit their grave letting them know that are live within our hearts. It didn't matter if they left us but we all can never forget them ever.

Two good things happened in these five months, and that was Blake found his mate. He went to the neighboring pack after three months of the war for inspection, if the new alpha was taking good care of the pack or not and there he found Crystal. An eighteen year old, blonde with brown eyes chubby and kind Crystal Morgan. We all were happy for them because Blake was smiling and laughing again. Finally, the sadness in everyone's eye dissipated with his good news because he was the kingdom's beta and people were happy with his happiness.

Another happy news was the kingdom's warrior and his mate expecting. We found out Jenny was pregnant and that filled our heart with joy. Slowly, slowly the sorrow and pain in everyone's eye began to dissipate and finally we all here, starting the new phase of our life with happiness.

"My lord!" I gasped when all of a sudden Estelle stood before me out of nowhere catching me off guard and causing the bowl literally fly up in the air but I managed to hold it back before I could spill the hot soup all over the carpet.

"Jeez! Estelle," I said once I held my breath and looked at her in shock.

“Sorry my Queen,” she bowed in response.

“What is it, Estelle?” Dylan asked as he emerged out of the kitchen room and stood behind me.

“Good news,” she said with a smile.

“And that is?” Cole asked curiously.

“The Elders are coming,” she said and we all stood up from our respective place out of shock.

True to her word, even Dylan got a message in his mind which told him that the Elders are coming. I paced around filling the anxiety growing up from within. I kept on rambling about what should I do? The Elders were like God to them and I was going to meet their God, as much it is a good thing, it filled my heart up with anxiety thinking what if they didn’t like me.

“Finally, they are coming. What took them so long?” Dylan said as I looked at him from the mirror.

“How will I know that?′ I asked and rubbed my forehead in aggravation.

“Hey, What happened to you?” he asked as he walked to me and turned me around to face him.

“I don’t know, how am I going to face them? What should I do? I can’t help but blame myself for the war. It was because of me that we los-”

“Aderyn, we have already talked about this. I told you it’s not your fault. Stop blaming yourself,” he said and I sighed.

We all waited standing in the meadow waiting for the Elders. I looked everywhere around myself. Would they emerge out from the woods? Or would they emerge from that direction? I kept on thinking and even thought why do we need to wait under the open sky? But then all of a sudden we all saw as lightning struck the ground few yards away from where we all standing and the clouds flashed few times. My breath caught in my mouth when I looked up at the sky and towards the clouds where three wolves emerged out. The wolves massive in size, even probably four times bigger than Dylan himself. A Strange blue aura surrounded them and they had this shining red diamond-like stone fixated in their forehead. Three of them looked the same but the left side had a little light red and blue aura around it. The middle one stood in the front while the other two stood just behind the middle one and they all looked down especially at me.

They were as if floating in the sky with the flashing clouds surrounding them and we all stood on the ground looking up at them.

“Bow!” Dylan informed me through the mind link and I bowed down immediately in submissive and salutation.

“The human Queen,” I looked up at the middle wolf when he addressed me. The strong pitch of his voice echoed my ears even after he wasn’t talking.

“We are here for you to address you as the Queen of the Kingdom,” the left side spoke and then only knew it was a female one.

“You passed every exam for being the perfect queen. The war didn’t go unnoticed by our eyes and we are delighted to say that you are the perfect Queen that the kingdom needs. We are aware, of your previous life and your courage, braveness, and kindness has won our respect and hereby, we would like to throne you as the Forever Queen and the first ever human queen to behold the place,” he said and I bowed when a ray of light emerged out of his red stone from his forehead and fell on me. I felt as if I was cocooned by an aura of power and I felt the strength growing in him to the extent where I felt I could literally lift up a heavy person by my only hand.

“Before we go, answer us what would you chose when there comes a situation either you chose your family or your mate?” they asked and I felt Dylan gripping my hand.

“I would choose family, my lord” I answered without even thinking and all of a sudden I felt sadness and feelings of being dejected crawled up my heart and I knew whose emotions that were. Dylan.

“Because?” he the wolf in the right asked.

“Because my mate is one among my family,” as soon as I said that happiness and joy took the place of the previous emotions.

“As we had expected the Queen to be,” the middle spoke and we all bowed when they turned around and ran into the clouds disappearing from our sight.

“I am your family,” Dylan said as he leaned down and pecked my lips.

“Of course you are,” I said pecked him back.

Candles were lighted in the dark room and the bed was filled up with rose petals.

I felt him kissing the back of shoulder as he encircled his arms around my waist and turned me around. He placed butterfly kisses all over my neck and pulled me closer to him which made me giggle. His finger moved up and he untied the knot of my dress from the back of my neck and let the dress slip down my body. It was our night. We were to consummate and he wanted to make me his forever. Like him, I wanted to make him mine and be his forever. Every time he called me beautiful and made me love, he made me feel special and wanted. Finally, I was seeing the other happy side of my life. I used to believe that my life is hollow and dark, but then he came into my life bring rays of hope and the reason for me to live once again.

Sometimes, I wondered what would have happened if I jumped off that bridge after I lost Nancy, what would have happened if I never met him. Would I be somewhere else? I would shiver not liking even to think about that. I was completely his and he was mine. The future was waiting for us and forgetting the past we held our hands and walked together to our bright and happy future.

Twenty years later

I stood in the corner talking to the witches and Lunas of different packs.

"Your highness you look gorgeous today," one of them said and I smiled at her thanking her for her sweet words.

It was a special day for us. Today was mine and Dylan's twentieth anniversary. Twenty years of being together in pain, sorrow, happiness. We fought sometimes but then we couldn't stay away from each other. Inseparable. Our bond has grown with the time as we aged I began to forget every single suffering and pain that I had endured at the early stage of our life.

"Where is our princess?" I heard Dylan and I looked back to see him and Blake looking towards the other side. I couldn't help but smile seeing our nineteen years old grown and turned beautiful Gracie walking towards her dad as she ran to him and he engulfed her into his arms lifting her up.

"Dad," she laughed when he twirled her around.

Gracie was studying law and she came here to meet us for our anniversary. I smiled looking at them. They looked happy. Even in his late forty's Dylan looked the same just some crow feets, laugh lines on the side of his eye and some gray hair told us that like us he was aging as well.

"So, this is what I saw," I heard Cyreanna whisper and I raised eyebrow at her confused about what she was talking about. She smiled and shook her head no speaking a quiet 'nothing.'

"Mom," Evan our fifteen-year-old boy walked up to me and pecked my cheeks.

"Where were you and what are you wearing?" I asked looking at his low hung ripped jeans and black leather jacket.

"Mom it's called fashion," he said and took a step back when I tried to touch his hair.

"You call this way too ripped jeans a fashion? Are you kidding me? It's not ripped but torn jeans," I complained seeing the torn part of the jeans which showed his knee.

"Mom, please!" he argued and it when both Gracie and Dylan walked up to us.

"Dylan look-" he cut me off "Let him wear whatever he want," he took his side.

"Thanks, dad," Evan smirked at his dad. Evan looked exactly like me while Gracie inherited her Dad's look and hair.

“Really Dylan?” I glared at him. It was only because of Dylan that both of my kids were spoiled. He let them do anything they wished and wanted and that always nagged me.

“Fine, wear whatever you want!” I threw my hands up in the air and walked towards the food counter.

They don’t want me. Why should I keep nagging them to behave or wear like this when everything that does gets a green signal from their dad? None of them ever consider my advice. Fine, I won’t ever stop them.

“Love,” I heard Dylan from behind me as I picked up the grilled chicken and put it on my plate ignoring him.

“Aderyn,” he kept his hand on my shoulder but I jerked it away.

“Don’t touch me,” I hissed at him.

“Today is our anniversary love,” he tried to lighten my mood and I huffed at him.

“So? It is my fault that today is our anniversary?” I questioned and turned around glaring at him.

“You are ruining them, you don’t understand it!” I complained as I picked up my plate and walked toward the table.

“No, I’m not,” he argued.

“I just want them to have the life which we both didn’t have,” he said as he took the seat before me.

“But that doesn’t mean that you will bring and let the do whatever they want,” I complained ad shoved the pieces of chicken into my mouth.

“Love,” he called and I averted my gaze away from him ignoring him.

“Love?” he called me again only to be ignored once again.

“Look to your side,” he said and I did without even complaining and felt as the spoon fell from my hand. There he was Evan. He went back and had changed his clothes. Gracie smiled as both of them walked to us. Evan was now wearing a white plain decent shirt with sky blue decent jeans. His hair was combed neatly and I felt tears threatened to spill my eyes when I looked at him. It was the first time ever when I was witnessing him in decent clothes. He looked like me, a complete reflection of me but with Dylan’s eyes and smile. Now, he looked like a prince.

He walked up to me and stood next to me. I got up my chair and looked at him from up to down. He was only fifteen but he was already of his father’s height that made me look up at him. I smiled satisfied with his new look and looked at Gracie knowing it very well that it was her work.

“Surprise,” they both said in unison and I clamped my mouth with my hand finally letting my tear spill. Tears of joy.

“Mom, always emotional,” Evan said and hugged me.

As he pulled away and began to roll up his sleeves, I slapped his hands away and rolled down his sleeves.

“Mom!” he complained.

“Shut up!” I said and smiled satisfied.

“Look, Dylan, I can’t believe our son is so handsome,” I said dreamingly and felt encircling his hands around me.

“That’s because I am handsome,” he said snorting at the end that made us laugh.

So, this was my family. We supported and cared for each other. I learned an important lesson when I met Dylan and it was never to give up on life even if you are in a terrible condition. I would have never been able to make it this far in my life without Dylan, and I loathed the fact that there was even a time, when I wished my life to end but now, when I think of it I feel proud of myself that I didn’t let the darker side of me to control my life else, I wouldn’t have been here. As I wrote it down in my diary I looked at my family portrait and smiled. It was how life should be.

THE END